Irresistible Invitations

S.S.Sahoo

STORYPDF

Complete English text · A4 reading edition

Contents

Chapter 1 6

Chapter 2 12

Chapter 3 17

Chapter 4 22

Chapter 5 26

Chapter 6 30

Chapter 7 34

Chapter 8 39

Chapter 9 44

Chapter 10 48

Chapter 11 54

Chapter 12 60

Chapter 13 64

Chapter 14 69

Chapter 15 76

Chapter 16 80

Chapter 17 84

Chapter 18 91

Chapter 19 96

Chapter 20 100

Chapter 21 104

Chapter 22 109

Chapter 23 114

Chapter 24 117

Chapter 25 121

Chapter 26 126

Chapter 27 131

Chapter 28 135

Chapter 29 140

Chapter 30 145

Chapter 31 150

Chapter 32 156

Chapter 33 163

Chapter 34 168

Chapter 35 172

Chapter 36 180

Chapter 37 186

Chapter 38 194

Chapter 39 199

Chapter 40 205

Chapter 41 214

Chapter 42 223

Chapter 43 229

Chapter 44 235

Chapter 45 240

Chapter 46 247

Chapter 47 254

Chapter 48 261

Chapter 49 266

Chapter 50 278

Chapter 51 289

Chapter 52 296

Chapter 53 301

Chapter 54 308

Chapter 55 315

Chapter 56 324

Chapter 57 333

Chapter 58 Epilogue: The start of a new beginning 346

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / Irresistible Invitations.

Reading edition: 2026-10-29. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

Chapter 1

I am so happy. It is the most important day of my life after all. I am getting married to the love of my life. I am getting married to the only person I loved so much in this world.

I looked at myself in the mirror. I was wearing a long White wedding gown with an umbrella cut and heart shape strapless dress. It was lacey at some parts and the corset I wore underneath the dress made my figure look more good. My light brown hair was down into curls and flower clips were attached to the left side of my hair.

I was completely ready. My make up was done perfectly with shimmery red lipstick and my blue eyes looked absolutely beautiful with the liner that my makeup man applied on me.

I wore a white peeptoes sandal which increased my original height of 5′8" to three to four inches more.

“Oh my God! You look so beautiful Juliette” Kiara my best friend squealed as she took me into a hug.

“Thank you” I blushed as I turned around towards the mirror shyly.

“Aww look at you. Today is your wedding and you are still shying. What will you do in your wedding night?” She elbowed me and made me grow even more red than I already was.

“Kiara!” I shushed her as she began to laugh like a hyena at my expression and hugged me sideways.

“Emmett is just so lucky” she spoke as she looked at me through the mirror.

Her long black hair looked beautiful as she braided it to her side and she was wearing a golden colour strapless gown with red lipstick. Her black eyes looked beautiful with her cateye style and she stood confident with her 5′7" height, wearing her pair of heels. She was a beautiful woman. Kiara Richmond was the hottest girl in the town. She was born to the wealthiest family in New York and lived with her parents in the most luxurious part of New York enjoying her Spinster life. The only thing was she never believed in love.

I wonder sometimes, how we both became best friends. I also belong to a wealthy family just like her but opposite to her I totally believed upon love. I liked to Study when she liked to party. I liked to party when it was exam time when she liked to hide herself from her alcoholic friends studying for the exams. The only thing is after partying so much during exam times I always managed to secure more than her. She was my best friend in College but as well as my best competitor. It was the time of Christmas when I met Emmett for the first time in a party that my parents kept for me as I turned Twenty two. My birthday party. I met him there in the party and instantly, I grew to like him. Soon we began to date and after a year of dating we were in a

relationship. After a year he proposed me directly for wedding and me being a lovesick woman said yes to him.

“I believe the one who you will love will be the most Handsome man you would ever meet” I smiled turning towards her to face her.

“Oh not again! Juliette just not today please” she rolled her black orbs while I shooked my head at her childishness. She just never believed in love.

“Juliette!” We both turned towards the door to find Jace peeping his head inside watching us with a smile.

“Come here kid!” Kiara teased him. Jace Swanson was my only brother. He was three years younger to me. He disliked it whenever Kiara called him Kid. Kiara loved teasing him and Jace couldn’t stop getting irritated by my best friend.

“Please! I am 21 for your kind information” Jace spoke irritated and Kiara rolled her eyes muttering “whatever” to herself.

She can be mean sometimes.

“Jacey!” I squealed and ran to hug him.

“Hey no don’t touch my hai-” he closed his mouth when I already ruffled his soft black hair which he inherited from my Mom.

“Aww Jacey don’t be like that. Today is my wedding” I cooed as I pinched his cheeks.

“Can you atleast act like an elder?” He slapped away my hand and furrowed his eyebrow irritated.

“We just love irritating you Jacey” I pulled him into a hug and he began to resist me but soon gave up and hugged me back tightly.

“I am going to miss you Julie” he whispered into my hair. He was really taller than me which made me really jealous of him sometimes.

“I will too” I whispered as I began to feel little sad that I was going to leave him.

“Come on now everyone is waiting for you” he pulled away from the hug as he cupped my face in his hands and kissed my forehead.

“You look beautiful” he spoke cheerfully.

“Okay guys now don’t be emotional. Its her wedding and you will just ruin her make up so hush and Juliette come here” Kiara interferred and asked me to go to her.

I walked towards her and she took the veil from the table and adjusted it on my head covering my face.

“Here!” She gave me a bouquet of rose and I held it and giving a last glance at myself in the mirror I inhaled deeply feeling nervous all of a sudden. I don’t know why but suddenly I began to feel anxiety grow up inside me. Probably because of the wedding I thought and shrugged it off.

“Lets go. Dad is waiting outside for us” Jace took hold of my arm while Kiara helped me with my gown and we walked out of the room together.

“That’s it I am going to get married now. My life is going to change today” I thought to myself as a smile broke into my lips.

We walked towards the entrance of the church and soon I saw Dad standing near the entrance with my Mom waiting for us. My Dad Mr. Stephen Swanson and Mom Mrs. Jessica Swanson were my life. They did everything to give me a life I deserved. I remember when there was a time when Dad was not a wealthy man but an average employee of a company. He worked day and night for us. I looked exactly like him. Inheriting his brown hair and blue eyes, I was his princess and I knew he loved me more than Jace.

“My princess” his eyes watered as he saw me in the wedding dress and took me into a hug.

“I am going to miss you” he cried as I enjoyed his embrace and inhaled his smell which is what I loved the most about him. If anything he loved except me was cleanliness. He was the most clean man I have ever saw in my life.

“My darling” my mom cooed as she engulfed me into her arms. My mother was an athlete when she was married to my father. She was really strong.

“Mom I can’t breathe” I managed to speak with great difficulty and finally she let me go realising it and I huffed out air feeling relaxed.

“Honey!” My Dad scolded her and she smiled sheepishly at me.

“Sorry I just got carried out with my emotions” she gave an explanation.

I smiled at her and squeezed her arm “it’s okay mom”.

“Okay it’s time now” my dad spoke as he checked the time in his watch.

“I love you sweetheart” my mom kissed my forehead and Jace hugged me again as both of them began to leave.

Kiara was my bridesmaid. She took her place with the kids and showed me a thumbs up sign mouthing “All the best”. I smiled at her as I linked my arms with my Dad and we waited for the gate to open.

The music began to play and the gate opened revealing a crowded church. It was filled with people as all of them waited patiently for the bride to appear.

Slowly we began to walk as we reahersed earlier. My legs began to wobble out of nervousness and my palms began to sweat.

“Relax princess” my Dad whispered squeezing my arms assuring me that everything was going to be great.

I managed to smile at the people and hummed as a response to dad. I saw Emmett waiting for me looking confident standing on the alter. He looked so handsome wearing his black suite. His hair was combed back and his grey eyes twinkled when he saw me. Immediately, a smile broke into his lips as he licked his lips waiting for me.

I knew he was impatient.

He was talking the whole night with me on the phone discussing about our wedding night. He had planned so much and he wants everything just to be as he has planned.

He was really desperate to have me.

I blushed deep red when he winked at me. It took me a month to convince my family especially my father and Kiara. I don’t know why but both of them disliked Emmett when they met him for the first time. But I loved him. Finally after so much difficulty I managed to convince them for this marriage.

“Take good care of her son. I hope you to take care her of her just like me” my father spoke as he handed my hand to Emmett.

“I promise I will take care of her even more than you” he replied as he smiled at Dad and dad nodded leaving me in the aisle.

“You look beautiful muffin” Emmett whispered to me as he placed a kiss on the back of my hand.

“I just can’t wait to get you” he winked making me blush.

A clearing of throat made us snap out of our little moment. The priest cleared his throat probably hearing Emmett’s words.

“Shall we began now?” The priest asked holding his book and we nodded.

He began to read his book while people sat down on their places watching us while the priest read his book.

“Now you may speak your vows” he told us and I nodded. Finally it was the time. I have waited for this moment from so long. As I was just going to open my mouth, we heard a gun shot and my eyes widened out of shock and fear.

I looked towards the entrance and saw a man standing with his one hand up with a gun. He smirked at the people who gasped at him because of fear and few man followed him as they pointed their gun towards the people to stop them from moving around.

“What’s going on?” I heard people wishpering.

“Who are you?” My father stood up as a man pointed a gun towards him asking him to sit down.

My heart hammered against my ribcage seeing the sight.

I looked towards Emmett to find him sweating badly and his hands were trembling.

“What’s wrong with him?” I thought to myself.

“Emmett What is going on? Why aren’t you doing anything?” I called him and tried to touch him but the man who shot that gun earlier came and stood before me blocking my sight.

He towered my height and stood tall confidently before me with a hardened expression on his face. His brown eyes glaring down at me making me step away from him but he held my arm and steadied me on my place.

“L-Leave me” I stammered fearing him.

“Emmett!” I called him for help but when I looked at him his nose was bleeding and he was being held by two men who pulled him with them from the aisle.

“Juliette!” He called coughing a little. I gasped seeing his condition and tried to walk towards him only to be blocked again by the Brown-eyed man.

“Now you will feel how I felt when you took the most precious thing away from me you mutt” the brown-eyed man snarled looking towards Emmett.

“I will make sure to let you see what is going to happen now with your own eyes” he hissed at him with hatred in his eyes.

“You proceed what you were doing” he spoke pointing his gun towards the priest. The priest gulped and nodded continuing again.

“W-What are you doing? Leave me” I began to struggle against him. He tightened his grip and glared at me. Then he nodded towards the men and they all took their position surrounding both of my parents pointing their guns towards them. Everything was a Chaos now.

“Do as I say or you lose them” he hissed as he tightened his grip on my arm more. I stood paralyzed on my spot seeing the deadly weapons which were pointed against my family. One of is man handed him a piece of paper and he placed it on the officiant’s book.

“Sign it!” he commanded as he gestured me to sign on the paper. The frightened officiant immediately took his pen out and handed it to me which I refused to take.

The brown-eyed man before me hissed at my refusal and pointed his gun towards my father.

“I see, you don’t want to see your family alive,” he said icily which was enough for me to tremble in my place.

“No! No!” I cried and hurriedly took the pen from the officiant and signed the paper without even reading it. My hands trembled when I was done and beads of sweat formed on my chin as I wiped it away using the back of my hand.

He smirked down at me and then at Emmett who was now struggling against the two men.

“Leave me. Juliette! No don’t do this” he begged and scream.

“I, Zachary Udolf Sullivan take Juliette Swanson as my lawfully wedded wife” I heard the man speak with a smirk and as I began to register what was going on, he reached forward and took the paper from the officiant and showed it to me and to everyone. The paper had my sign and even his sign on it. And to my absolute horror, it was a marriage license paper.

“No!” I heard Emmett screaming.

As I registered what just happened the brown-eyed man pulled me to him and captured my mouth in his kissing me forcefully before everyone. I tried to push him away but he held me by my waist and pulled me more closer to him as he began to kiss me forcefully.

Tears were continuously flowing down my cheeks as he did so and finally when he let me go, he wiped his lips using his sleeves and smirked at me and looked towards the priest who spoke lowly “Now I may declare you as husband and wife. May-y God bless you” he finished trembling on his spot.

It was a total shock for me. Whatever just happened was totally a shock for me but it was nothing to what I just witnessed next.

The man whose name was Zachary and who was my husband now pulled out his gun and pointed it towards Emmett.

“Now it’s time to bid goodbye” he spoke deadly as he pulled the trigger and we all heard a gunshot and I looked down shocked to see blood on my dress while Emmett fell down on the floor. Everyone began to yell and scream panicking while his man tried to control the people.

But only thing which my mind registered was the blood which was on the floor everywhere.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 2

“Em-Emmett” I spoke registering what just happened. I was in a state of shock now. I was beginning to feel my head spinning very badly yet I managed to compose myself for the sake of Emmett.

“Emmett” I cried as I ran to him dodging Zachary successfully.

“Emmett!” I cried holding his face and began to pat his face. His eyes were closed and I looked down to see blood oozing out of his middle region.

“Emmett open your eyes. Please!” I begged and cried when he didn’t even respond.

“Juliette!” I heard someone calling me and I looked towards the people to see Jace screaming for me as he was held by a man stopping him from coming near me.

“J-Jace look what happened to Emmett. He is just not opening his eyes” I cried.

“Juliette!” Kiara cried looking at me.

“Kiara look what just happened” I cried holding Emmett’s Face.

“Emme-” I was cut off by Zachary himself as he shouted “Enough!” at me and got hold of my arm pulling me up. I began to struggle against him to let myself free.

“Let me go!” I cried wanting to free myself.

“You are coming with me” he spoke in a dead voice and began to drag me with him.

“Juliette!” I heard everyone shouting for me.

“Leave her” Kiara screamed trying to get me from the crowd.

“Leave me!” I cried, even more, when he ignored my pleadings and began to walk towards the exit.

“Where are you taking me? Let me go!” I cried as I began to struggle again and tried to get myself free.

“Juliette!” I heard my father screaming for me.

I looked back at them to see them crying for me. My eyes fell on the figure who was lying on the floor.

“Emmett” I whispered feeling helpless.

I was dragged out of the church and immediately a Limo Pulled before us.

Zachary nodded at his men who were surrounding us holding their guns probably for security. Security for Zachary.

Zachary pulled me towards the limo and I began to struggle more.

“Leave me! Leave me” I screamed and finally, I was able to yank my hand away from his hold. As soon as I was able to free myself I turned around to run back to Emmett but again I was stopped when Zachary took hold of my hand and made me turn back to him again.

Using all my force I used my other hand to slap him hard on his face.

His face turned to the left and his widened probably due to shock.

“You Bastard who do you think you are?” I began to scream at him.

Suddenly his face contorted with anger and he glared at me looking way too angry.

“You will know soon who I am” he hissed and pulled me to him making me gasp “and for that slap” he traced my face using his gun “I will just let it slip as it was too much for you for a day but” he stopped on my lips “next time I will kill you” he warned and his eyes showed sincerity.

I gulped a lump in my throat but nevertheless stood my position. I glared back ta him which made him smirk.

“Feisty hu?” He whispered seductively now.

“Now! Be a good girl if you want your family to get out of that church alive” he pulled me closer as he folded my hand on my back.

“W-What do you mean?” I whispered not finding my voice. My heart thumping loudly.

“My man are still inside that church. One wrong move from you and they are dead” he spoke emotionlessly as killing people was nothing to him.

“You wouldn’t” I stammered feeling anxiety growing inside me. I was feeling suffocated now.

“Try me” he whispered.

“Why are you doing this?” I cried as I couldn’t stop my tears any longer. I began to feel helpless.

He stared down at me but never answered my question. He took hold of my hand and turned around dragging me with him. I kept my mouth close only because of his threat and cried silently following him.

He pushed me inside the limo and got in after me closing the door. But I heard my name being called when he closed the door.

I looked out of the window to see Dad running out of the church with Jace and soon mom came following them.

“Juliette!” I couldn’t hear their voice but guessed my name probably being called by them as they began to fight against the man trying to come to us.

The Limo started to move and soon it began to run to god knows where. I kept staring at the figure who were fighting against the man to get to me.

“Dad mom” I whispered as we lost their sight and I slumped back on my seat sobbing feeling helpless. I looked towards the left towards Zachary who stared down at me with a neutral expression.

The only thing I felt for him right now was hatred. I hated him so much. He killed my love. The thought that I would be not seeing Emmett again in my life pained me and I hated Zachary more for it. He was the reason what just happened.

“I hate you” I whispered but I knew he heard me as he turned his head away from my direction and stared out of the window.

“I just hate you” I whispered again but this time to myself as I silently leaned my head against the window and cried my eyes out.

I don’t know for how much long I kept on crying but soon I began to feel my head spin and I began to close my eyes feeling tired all of a sudden. As soon as I closed my eyes I was out. I found myself slipping into darkness.

I woke up feeling suffocated. My eyes fluttered open and I found myself in a closed room. I was lying on a bed and I looked around to see it was a small room with dim lights. Everything was classy and seemed expensive. By what caught my attention was the sound of the engine.

“Oh no! I am in a plane?” I whispered realizing it when my eyes fell on a small circular window which showed me the clouds.

I got up from the bed and made my way towards the door which I guessed as the attached bathroom. Luckily it was the bathroom. I could hear the wind more clearly in the bathroom. I looked at myself in the mirror to find myself a mess. My makeup was smudged and my lipstick was smudged towards the left.

Then I remembered the kiss that I shared with the man who killed my love. I shuddered and felt disgusted.

I had to splash water many times on my face to get rid of my makeup. I and to use soap as there was no face wash. Using a brush I brushed my hair and got rid of the clips. But what made me nauseous was the blood which was on my dress.

It was Emmett’s blood.

My eyes teared up thinking about him. What would be my parents doing now?

“Emmett” I cried, even more, realising that I lost him. He was no more. I lost him before my eyes and I couldn’t do anything to save him.

This is all because of Zachary.

Why did he kill him?

Why did he marry me?

I have never met Zachary before. It is clear that I do not know him in any way. So why did he kill Emmett and what did he marry me?

I remember what Zachary spoke earlier in that Church “Now you will feel how I felt when you took the most precious thing away from me you dog”.

Precious thing?

Emmett took his precious thing?

No, he is lying. I know Emmett. He can never do this to anyone.

“But whatever it is it doesn’t mean that you could just kill someone and marry someone forcefully against its will” I spoke to myself.

“You asked for it Zachary and I will make sure to live your life a living hell from now” I swore to myself as I felt myself filling with hatred.

“I don't care what precious thing you lost but you took the most precious thing away from me and I will make sure to take revenge for it making your life hell” I swore my words filled with venom.

I heard the door opening and closing. I assumed it as Zachary. He must be into the room checking for me.

I quickly composed myself wiping away my tears and made mine out of the bathroom. As soon as I came out I saw him standing near the bed with a hardened expression.

“Oh you are back,” I said sweetly which made him furrow his eyebrows.

“Wha-” I cut him off “I was waiting for you” I spoke and went towards the door which was slightly ajar. I closed it and clicked the door knob close.

“What are you doing?” He asked as I turned around and I made my way towards him. As I walked, I began to unzip the zip at my back of my dress.

“Honey did you forgot? It’s out wedding night after all” I said and smirked inwardly when I saw his eyes widening with shock hearing me.

“Have you lost it?” He spoke deadly.

“What? Me? Oh no” I went to him and pushed him on the bed.

“What the hell” he screamed as he tried to get up.

I climbed on him and slammed my hands on the either side of his head stopping him from getting up.

He held my waist and tried to push me but I refused to move away.

“Did you forgot what I told you about your parents?” He hissed

“Oh I didn’t forget and what am I doing? I am just trying to coax my husband. After all, you are my husband now and c’mon it’s out wedding night” I spoke seductively as I trailed my finger on his face like he did the last time on me using his gun. He is handsome actually. He has this beautiful deep and intense eyes and chiseled jawline and sharp nose. But the hatred which I felt for him made me blind to all his features. I would have swooned for him if I would’ve met him in any other way around.

It’s a shame that God made such a heartless man such a piece.

“Listen just get off me” he spoke with a calm voice trying to get me off him.

I smirked at him and began to unbutton his top buttons.

“No” I whispered seductively.

I began to lean towards his face making him freeze and as soon as I was near him he broke out of his thoughts and holding my torso he succeeded in pushing me away from him. I fell to his side while he got up and strode out of the room hurriedly not even bothering to look behind towards me.

I heard him muttering “Idiot!” to me.

I laughed at him as I folded my arms behind my head and smiled victoriously.

“Score one for Juliette” I spoke to myself.

“It’s just the start. Just wait and watch” I smirked to myself.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 3

Juliette Pov

I looked out of the window to find clouds and only clouds. I was frustrated being in that same room from his knows to many hours. So, I made up my mind to go out of the small cabin and check out. The stunt that I pulled a few hours ago is still fresh in my mind. Still, I just want to know why did he do that?

I walked out of the room, crossing a small cabin, I reached the front part of the plane. There I saw the devil himself sleeping on his seat leaning his head against his seat.

He looked so peaceful in his sleep.

He took all my peace and dreams away from me. I was suppose to enjoy my life, my honeymoon with Emmett and here I am mourning on his death and sitting married to a complete stranger.

I don't understand what to do. Should I cry and shut myself down for Emmett's death or should I take revenge for him?

Finally, I decide to lock all my tears and sorrow inside me until I take my revenge. I won't satisfy until I make this Zachary guy kneel down before me and ask for forgiveness for what he did to Emmett and to me.

Suddenly I was brought back to reality when the plans began to tremble. I loosed my balance and in no time going myself falling towards my front. I closed my eyes scared and waited to get hurt but when I felt a touch on my arm, my eyes fluttered open only to find myself again on Zachary.

For the second time of the day.

He held my arms supporting me while I sat sideways on his laps. His eyes displaying shock and surprise but at the same time I found myself getting mesmerized by his brown eyes which were filled with deep secrets and something which I couldn't comprehend.

His eyes began to flutter and I snapped out from our little moment. I jerked up away from him as soon as I realised I was sitting on a murderer.

"What the hell is your problem" he spoke narrowing his eyes as adjusted his black suite.

"You are my problem" I spoke lowly but I knew he heard it.

"Where are you taking me?" I asked as I sat infront of his seat on another seat.

He stared at me for some minutes and as usually chose to ignore me as he leaned back against his seat and closed his eyes totally shutting me.

“Fine!” I muttered irritated by his rudeness.

I chose to calm myself down for some minutes. So I sat next to the window and leaned against the window.

I just wanted to forget everything that just happened few hours ago. My energy system is totally drained out and now I will gladly accept anything which could provide me peace and more importantly calmness.

I closed my eyes and folded my arms across my chest feeling little cold.

“Who ever knew that a simple wedding could turn out this horrendous” I thought to myself as I drifted to darkness.

“Get up!” I heard someone

As I began to gain consciousness, I rubbed my eyes and looked up to find the murderer himself standing before me and looking down at me with a boring expression.

“Get up! We are here. Follow me!” He commanded me as if I were his dog and turned on his back walking somewhere.

I got up from my seat and felt something dropping to the floor. I looked down to find a shawl lying on the floor. Confused, I picked it up and ran my palm over the soft shawl wondering who covered me with it.

“I said Follow me” I heard him speak up and without wasting any more time I took that shawl with me as I ran before him following him.

He walked out of the plane with me trailing behind him and immediately I looked arround to find ourselves surrounded by luxourious black cars whose name I didn’t know quite actually.

I sucked at all this.

For me car is a car.

I noticed body guards with huge well built body all dressed in typical black clothes with black sunglasses looking here and there to security.

“Sir welcome back” a guy bowed his head before Zachary and in return Zachary just nodded.

“This way” he escorted us to a car, black luxourious car and without uttering any words I followed Zachary into the car because I knew it was useless trying to escape.

First of all, I had no idea of where I’m the world I was. Secondly, I was surrounds by his men. That means I would be easily caught if I ever tried to escape and lastly, I didn’t wanted to escape. Not now actually. Not before getting my answers and getting my revenge.

I sat silently lost in my deep thoughts while the car ride. I tried to atleast have an idea on where I was by looking outside the window for any shop or clue but everything was written in different language and eventually I gave up when I didn't get a single clue.

But as if God heard me I got a clue and it was totally devastating for me. I was in freaking Egypt. I would've never got it if I had never saw that pyramids. Now I got it. It was all in Arabic language.

"How can I be so stupid not able to recognise this earlier?" I questioned myself.

I just can't believe this. This freaking monster made me travel all this way to Egypt. But how in the world I couldn't know this earlier?

I looked towards my left to find him typing something on his phone. I tried to peep but a shiny material which poked out of his waistline made me to sit back on my seat.

"Why in the world is he always carrying that stupid gun with him?" I muttered as I closed my eyelids rubbing my face using my palms frustrated.

"Why are we in Egypt?" I asked in a low voice.

For some minutes I thought that may be he didn't hear me but when he did I wished I should've never asked it to him.

"You are where I have brought you" he spoke in a bored tone as he continued typing in his phone.

"Idiot!" I muttered

The car ride was in silence and after a hour we reached out destination. The car came to a halt before a big house. I scoffed looking at that house. Atleast my house was bigger than this.

"We will staying here for three weeks then we will fly back to my place" he said as he stepped out of the car.

"Y-Your place? What do you mean by that? Isn't this your place?" I questioned confused.

"Do you think I stay somewhere like this?" He asked raising his eyebrows.

I chose to keep my mouth close.

Ofcourse! He would never stay somewhere like this. Ever!

He walked towards the entrance and as usually I followed him.

"Witney take her to her room" he ordered a woman who was dressed in black typical dress like a maid.

"And sent me something to eat" he comanded again and without saying anything walked away leaving me alone with Witney.

“Please follow me” she spoke professionally and I did as she said following her wherever she took me.

“Here! This is your room for now” she opened a door which led is into a room. It was not a big room but medium size room with purple and white wall paint. An attached bathroom and a wardrobe. A small bed in the middle of the room and most importantly no window.

“Why isn’t there any window in here?” I asked confused.

I have already started to hate this room. I was feeling suffocated.

“Please give me some other room” I told her and tried to leave but she stood before me blocking me with an apologetic face.

“I am sorry Ma’am but Sir told me to give you this room only. You can not leave this room” she spoke with a low voice.

“Wha-” she cut me off “Please change something comfortable you will get from that wardrobe and I will be bringing you your food” she bowed and closed the door on my face.

“What the-” I began to bang on the door “open the door! Please! Open the door”.

When no one responded, I eventually gave up as I slide against the door crying and sobbing again remembering who he was and what he did to me.

After crying my eyes out, I managed to stand on my feet but my feet wobbled due to my draining energy.

“I just hate for all this Zachary” I screamed as tears pooled my eyes and I made my way towards the bathroom.

This wedding dress suffocated me and I just want myself out of this as soon as possible. I can not bear seeing those blood stains on my dress which made me remember painful memories.

As I got inside the small bathroom, I got rid of the dress as soon as possible and took a cold shower relaxing a bit. I rubbed the parts of my body painfully feeling disgusted that a murderer touched me. What Zachary did was a sin. He did all that in a holy church and for that I wished God to punish him for his sins.

Using the towel I wiped the water away from my body and wrapped myself using another towel and walked out of the bathroom. The ceiling fan was rotating making squeaking sounds and I feared it to fall on me.

Opening the wardrobe, I fished out a layered spaghetti top and a black one third pant. But no undergarment.

“I guess I had to just manage with this” I muttered as I changed into those clothes and wrapped my way hair using that same towel.

I walked towards the bed and laid down on it watching blankly as the ceiling fan rotated.

Soon, I began to feel sleepy and eventually I passed out with only one person in my mind.

“Emmett”.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 4

Juliette Pov

“Ma’am? Ma’am?” I heard someone and I jolted up from my bed alarmed.

Running the sleepiness out of my eyes I looked here and there to find the person. I saw the same maid from before standing near my bedpost holding a tray looking at me without any expression.

She must be in her late fifties and it is really astonishing that a lady like her not to show any emotions.

“I am sorry to wake you but you need to eat your food” she placed the tray before me and bowed before leaving.

My stomach rumbled seeing the food. Opening the lid of the dish I was hit by a strong aroma of coffee and scrambled eggs. Without wasting any more minute I took the fork and started to eat like a maniac. Savouring each bite and sip.

When I was done I kept the tray down on the floor and unwrapped the towel which was still wrapped around my hair. My hair was still damp. I went to the wardrobe and took out a comb which I saw earlier to comb my hair. After struggling to detangle all the tangles I combed my hair to the side and tied it using a rubber band.

“What should I do now?” I asked to myself as I began to pace around the room.

I looked at the clock on the wall to see it’s already evening. I was beginning to feel suffocated. Who locks someone inside a room with no window?

I decided to one thing which I am used to since I have been brought here.

Bang on the door till someone lets me out.

“Let me out!” I banged on the door shouting like a maniac.

“Open the door! Anybody there? Let me out!”

“Hey! Is anyone listening to me? Let me out please” I shouted on the top of my voice.

I banged continuously intentionally. If anyone was out there then she or he would definitely get irritated by this and would definitely let me out.

“Open the d-” I was cut off when I found the door knob turning so I took a step back for the person to open the door.

I guess I should have never banged the door because there stood the murderer himself with an angry expression and he looked ready to kill me.

“Why in the world are you banging the door like a maniac?” He took menacing steps as he glared at me.

I decided not to show him that I was afraid of him. Well, I was actually, but he doesn’t need to know.

“Well that’s because someone locked me inside this room with no windows and I was feeling suffocated” I spoke confidently as I glared back at him.

He was wearing the same clothes from earlier. But he had taken his jacket off him.

“Suffocated right? You were not going to die. You don’t need to bark like a dog to get your point” he insulted me.

“What did you just say? Dog? You called me a Dog?” I was insulted and I will be damned if I let him go this easily.

He narrowed his eyes but spoke nothing.

“Well then” I laughed sarcastically and then continued “Look who is saying” which made him raise his eyebrows.

“The dog himself is calling others dog” this caused anger fire up in his eyes.

“What did you just say?” He asked threatening me.

“Are you deaf?” I questioned mocking him.

“Enough!” In one moment I collided against his chest as he took hold of my arms and pulled me to him angrily.

“You will not talk to me like that. Do you understand?” he tightened his hold as he yelled at me angrily.

“Or what ?” I retorted. I knew I was playing with the fire.

“Don’t forget that your family is still on my gun point all I need to do is to give a simple order and then they will be finished” he sneered as he shoved me backward.

Tears pooled my eyes hearing him and in that moment my hatred for him grew even more.

“You wouldn’t” I managed to speak.

“Try me” he threatened with a neutral expression seeing my tears.

“Why are you doing this to me? What did I do that I had to go through all this?” I asked as tears began to roll down my cheeks. I hated being vulnerable now. I was feeling so vulnerable in front of him. Never had I ever felt such in my whole life. But this particular man has this influence on me which did all these peculiar emotions flowing out of me.

“Please at least let me know what is my mistake?” I sobbed as I leaned against the wall for support.

“It is better if you keep your mouth shut and do as you are told you” he spoke nonchalantly.

“What do you think I am? Huh?” I was back to spit fire.

“Who do you think I am? Do you think I am some kind of maid or servant that you can just boss around huh?” I snapped as I wiped the years angrily using my palms.

“You are here because of me” he spoke enunciating each word as if he wanted me to get this into my head.

“So don’t forget what I can do to you. You should be happy that you are still alive and you have been given room to stay unless you want me to get my men and lock you in the basement without any food” his words made me tremble with fear.

“W-Who are you?” I managed to ask without stuttering.

“I am nobody for your concern but I can be your worst nightmare if you don’t behave,” he told me icily.

“I just don’t get your point of marrying me. Did you get your revenge or something right? You killed him. Emmett! Before my own eyes. It is over. I want to go back to my family” I tried to reason.

“Go back to your room and just sleep” he turned his back towards me as he began to leave behaving as if he didn’t hear anything that I just said.

“No! Stop!” I yelled when I saw him again locking me inside the room.

He stopped midway from closing the door as he eyed me with a raised eyebrow.

“Don’t lock me in here” I spoke but it was like begging.

He sighed as he closed his eyes and shooked his head muttering something under his breath.

“See you behave good and I will not lock you anymore” he began to close the door again but I stopped him by running to him and holding his hand stopping him from closing the door.

“No! No! Please! Don’t close it. I am feeling suffocated” I begged as I held his hand which was on the door knob stopping him from closing the door. He stared at me for some seconds and then his eyes traveled to our hands. I realised what I just did and immediately jerked my hands away from his.

He looked here and there while I pushed back some loose locks of my hair out of my face, behind my ear.

“Fine! I am not locking it but I will if I get any unwanted and silly behavior from you” he told me and I nodded not wanting to say anything. Then he turned around and left without looking back at me.

I exhaled out air which I didn’t know that I holding and slowly closed the door. I was satisfied that at least I wasn’t locked inside. It’s not that I was planning to escape or something but every time I get myself locked I feel suffocated. It’s from my childhood.

Moreover, I don’t plan on escaping soon. I will one day actually but not now. Not until I get what I want.

“Answers and revenge” I spoke determinedly to get what I truly want.

With that, I closed the door and went back to my bed to sleep which I have been doing a lot since I have met this man.

“Zachary”

But the first thing I want to do is to contact my family. I need to know what happened there after I left. About Emmett especially.

My heart ached to realise what would have happened to him. But before I would start to cry again somehow I controlled myself and took deep breaths to calm myself down. I didn’t want my tears to go valueless any longer.

If anything I want is only to take bit by bit revenge for my every sufferings and tear.

“You will have it, Zachary”

“I don’t care why you did that but you are going to pay for it”.

“This is my promise” I swore as I lied down on the bed and tried to sleep.

“Zachary Udolf Sullivan”.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 5

Juliette Pov

I jolted up from my sleep when I heard something breaking and a lot of noise from outside.

“What the heck?” I said as I rubbed my eyes and pushed back the strands of hair that were falling on my eyes disturbing me.

“Shut up!” I heard someone yelling.

“What’s going on?” I asked myself as I got up from the bed and made my way towards the door. Turning the door knob, I huffed out a sigh of relief when I found it unlocked.

“Should I check What is going on there?” I found myself questioning myself.

Opening the door, I peeped my head out to look around. When I found nobody, I took a step out and then slowly walked out of the room, closing the door slowly in the process.

“I said Shut up or else I will..” I heard yelling again and I began to follow the voice.

I heard a lot of crashing and thrashing sounds.

“What was seriously going on?” now I was beginning to feel worried and little-scared hearing all those sounds.

I walked towards the left corridor and then I reached a room whose door was closed.

“How the hell is that possible?”

“I don’t know anything just f*cking find him”

“You have a week in your hand. If you don’t give me his details in this week then I am gonna blow your head out of your body. Do you Understand?”

The person yelled and answering him, I heard a quite “Yes Sir!” probably from the people who were inside.

It took me few seconds to recognize the person who was yelling as Zachary.

But whom does he want to find this bad?

The question lingered in my mind.

I stood there listening and thinking to their conversation when I couldn’t register the door in front of me being open and before me stood a very strong built men with blood shot eyes looking pissed probably finding me eavesdropping.

“Oh No!” I muttered.

“Who are you?” He snarled as he took hold of my arm and shooked me with all his power that for one second I thought I was going to dislocate my arm from my shoulder.

“Ah hey leave me!” I cried as I tried to get myself free.

“You were listening to our conversation. A spy!” He concluded and soon there was a Gun pointed at my head.

“Tell me who are you before I blow you -” he was cut off by Zachary himself.

“What’s going on there Max?” Zachary spoke from behind him and I was sure he didn’t have any Idea that I was the one standing at the door because the person Max who was pointing a Gun on my forehead was so huge, that he was fully blocking the sight of me from Zachary.

I was sure, my eyes were glistening with tears due to fear and for the first time in my life, I prayed the almighty to let Zachary see me before its too late.

“Boss we have an intruder here. She was eavesdropping. A spy!” The person whose name was Max spoke pressing the Gun on to my forehead.

“What? Who is it?” I heard Zachary speak and then some shuffling noise and footsteps means he was coming towards us.

“Boss I got this! I am just gonna blow her head” Max snarled angrily.

I seriously thought that today was my end. I closed my eyes waiting for him to pull the trigger and kill me. But I heard Zachary

“What the hell?”

“Put that gun down” he yelled.

“No! Boss, she is an intruder. She was eavesdropping” Max argued

“I said put that gun down else I will blow your head off” Zachary yelled.

“But Bos-” Max was cut off by Zachary.

“Put that Gun out of my wife’s head before I kill you” Zachary yelled angrily and my eyes fluttered open hearing the word “wife” from his mouth.

“W-Wife?” Max stammered and I think I heard him gulping.

“Oh, I am so sorry Ma’am” finally he took that stupid gun down and I exhaled a breath that I didn’t know I was holding.

“I am so sorry. Please Forgive me. I didn’t know that you were his wife” I heard Max’s apologies.

“How dare you-” I saw Zachary taking his Gun out and he was looking beyond angry at Max and before he could commit another crime I managed to butt in.

“Uh haha. It’s alright! No problem!” I laughed humourlessly and my statement cut Zachary in the middle. As he looked confused at my sudden change in demeanor.

This was the technique.

If I looked anything near to scared, then Max would have been shot by now. My calm behavior changed Zachary’s mind. This is what my Dad thought me earlier.

“I love you Dad!” I mentally screamed missing him.

“I forgive you haha” I laughed a little eyeing towards Zachary’s gun.

“W-What? Did you forgive me? So easily?” I found Max staring at me all shocked.

“Of course! It’s not your fault. It’s okay!” I watched as Zachary took his hand which was holding that deadly weapon down.

“Oh Thank you! Thank you so much Ma’am” he looked overjoyed.

It’s strange how everyone were scared of Zachary. I mean in compare to strength I think Zachary is nothing to the man standing before me because he muscular, well built, tall and what not. He can probably take Zachary down in fight. But see the Irony! He looked as if he was gonna pee on his pants seeing Zachary angry.

“Uh I am going back to my room. Can you please send Whitney to my room?” I tried to change the topic and asked the question directly to Zachary.

He stared at me for some minute and then nodded.

“Thank You uh Bye!” I found myself waving to Max who was still looking tensed.

“Uh? Bye!” He responded waving back a little.

I gave him a small smile and turned around to leave. I took slow steps and as soon as I crossed the main corridor, I ran.

I ran using my full strength back to my room.

Reaching my room, I closed the door shut and relaxed a little. I was panting badly due to fear and as well as the physical exercise I just did.

“How many times am I going to survive all this?” I screamed looking upwards.

“Answer me God. Please!” I begged.

“It is better to die than suffering all this again and again” I spoke to myself as I rubbed my head frustrated.

It was aching now.

“God! Somebody please give me a pain killer” I mumbled as I felt pain on my arm which was now starting to bruise due to Max.

“Great! In just two days I got all this fresh ugly Bruises” I muttered examining my arm. Some bruises were from Zachary and some were from Max.

“Why am I leaving behind? Let me bruise myself too!” I yelled as I punched my arm and held it tightly wanting to bruise it.

“My Wife!” I mocked in Zachary’s Voice as I punched the door using my fist.

“Damn! Ow!” I cried as I examined my knuckles which had some scratches now.

“First aid Kit too! God please!”

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 6

Zachary Pov

“Go and find him!” I ordered my boys and without wasting any more minute they ran out of my room searching for the person whom I wanted in front of me at any cost.

I am tired and I feel restless as I haven’t taken a nap from yesterday.

After that conversation with that woman who is my wife now, I went back to my room in thoughts of getting some rest but as if my fate wanted me to grow more tired than I really was, it brought me a new problem.

And this is one heck of a problem.

I sighed as I leaned against the wall raking a hand through my hair.

If anything is changing in my life than its only one thing, and that is my patience.

I have been growing impatient lately and with time my impatient is changing to anger. I can not bare a single human who doesn’t work according to me let alone go against me.

I would shoot that person right on its head without even giving them the time to explain or do something to save themselves.

I am growing a Violent man day by day but I don’t care. If anything I care, then it's my rules and things, should always be mine way. I hate it when it's not according to my way, what I have planned then its get really irritating to me. And the result comes out as death to whoever person is the cause of that disturbance.

The ringing of my phone broke me out of thoughts.

“Not again!” I muttered as I picked up the call though I wanted to reject it desperately.

“What is it?” was my direct question.

“Is that a way you talk to your father?” my father spoke from the other end with his as usual business like cold tone.

“I don’t have time for this all. Just say what do you want?”

There was a silence for some seconds but then he began and somehow I knew what he was going to speak next.

“I heard that you got married. Is it true?” He asked with calm tone but anyone could point out that hint of anger in his voice.

I rubbed my forehead for a headache growing even more and raked a hand through my hair.

“Is it true?” He asked again and this time his voice evident of being impatient.

“Yes! It is true” I enunciated his word and rolled my eyes. I was already waiting for his tantrums.

“May I ask what made you to marry in such a hurry that you didn’t even think to invite your own parents to let alone your inform your mother?” He asked with a high tone.

I chose to keep quiet because I knew nothing can get into his mind when he is angry.

I heard him taking a deep breath before continuing again.

“Who is that girl?” He asked in a plain tone.

“You don’t need to know,” I said as I pulled the drawer open and took out my iPad.

“Everything you do is for me to know always and I want to know about this as soon as possible because this is about my son who is running my business now and if you are thinking you are the boss now then you are wrong. I will be always the real Boss and you my son is my only heir. So everything that will cause hamper to my years hardworking will be my concern. Because I will not let you ruin it. And you marrying some woman just like that is my concern”.

I kept the iPad back on the table as his words struck my nerve.

“What I do and what I do not do was never of your concern, neither it is, nor it will ever be. And stop worrying about the business, because I am the one who is ruling now. You are retired. So go to some Island with mom and enjoy your vacation. I can take care of all this by myself. So, just don’t interfere now” with that I hung up on him and threw the phone on the table.

Every time I talk to him, I get all this new headache.

“Sir?” I looked up to see one of my men standing the doorway holding a gun on his hand.

I raised an eyebrow signalling him “what?”

“We found a suspect. He is in the basement. I think you should handle this now” he said and I got up from the chair and walked out of the room with him following me.

“Who is he?” I asked as we entered a secret room, after I punched the code on the wall. The door slid open and we entered into a dark hallway. Everything about my place is secretive. It has always been like this.

Perks of being a Mafia Boss.

But the world doesn’t know about this. I am a Simple Billionaire Businessman for those people who doesn’t know real Zachary Udolf Sullivan.

My middle name Udolf means wolf which perfectly suits my personality. The name was given by my grandfather who is currently living in some private Island enjoying his old days like

some normal person with grandmother and his grandchildren who are cousins and have no relation with this mafia world.

My cousins probably have no idea about all this because my grandmother wanted them to live like a normal human being away from all this violence. She even tried to get me out of all this but being the only heir of the great Mafia leader who is my father, I had to take this responsibility.

So, now I have to live a multiple life in which I am a successful Businessman who stood on his capability earning all this fame, which really was indeed. I never used a single penny for those part. And the other is a mafia Boss who has to do all illegal works and rule the underground.

Somehow, I have succeeded so far in living both the parts but I don't know for how long I could do that. I have this prediction that someday, somehow my real identity will be out and then I don't know or don't even have any plans how to cope up with all that.

But for now, I am concentrating only upon Today.

Basically, I have no bright future.

I envy my Grandfather. He was also one of the mafia boss. Might I say, very feared one. He ended his career by transferring his post to his heir that is my Father but not just in a normal way.

To the world "The most wanted and feared Mafia leader Avim Ben Gon was shot dead by the force during the Peace meet. It was a success to the peace meet".

Silly people doesn't even know that it was all planned from the beginning. For Grandfather it was his retirement and of course he can not just retire like a normal private employee. He had to make a grand exit which he did.

And of course "Avim Ben Gon" which is a Hebrew name was not his real name. His real name is..

Well lets forget about it for now.

I have heard many things about Avim. About how Ruthless he was. How he killed and murdered people. And some were even disturbing for me as it stated he even raped woman.

But I was been told by my Grandmother that grandfather was the most sweetest man she ever met. And those were all rumors to provoke fear in people mind towards him or strategies of his enemies to get to him. He always respected woman and that is why she fell in love with him and decided to live her rest of her life with him.

If it wasn't for grandmother, I would have totally believed all those rumors. Because, those can be true. Being mafia boss is not easy. Only one thing is needed for us and that's power.

If we have power, we have fear for us in people. If they have fear, then we will rule. As long as people remains fearing us. We will be ruling.

“Its one of his men Sir, we found him today in our territory. He was probably here to get him some information about our moves” he spoke and I nodded.

I think this is a way how I can free myself from all this headache, I have suffered today.

When it comes to violence, I am always the excited being.

Time to meet fear in the eyes of that man who thought that he could easily get inside my territory and give them information.

“Oh how stupid!” I smirked as I witnessed the sight before me.

A man was tied upside down from the ceiling with his hands tied, and his eyes were covered with a blind fold.

He was beaten already as blood were oozing out of his head and forearms.

“Well Hello!” I spoke from the darkness as I entered the dimmed light room toward my prey who whimpered hearing my voice.

“I hope you had a nice day here!” was my only remark as I got more near to him.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 7

Juliette Pov

“Can I call my family?” I asked for the second time to Zachary who was doing something on his mobile.

“Are you even listening?” I asked as I got irritated. He has been keeping on ignoring me from the time he has been sitting on this table where we were having our lunch.

“Can I call my family?” I asked raising my tone and this time he glared at me.

“No!” was his only answer.

“But why?”

“Shut up”

“What? Why shut up?” I argued and he was the who shut his mouth merging himself back into his mobile.

“Will you even tell me why the hell I can’t even contact my family?” I yelled.

“Answer me” I banged on the table when he didn’t even bother.

This got him because the next moment, he was beyond angry. He got up from his seat and walked towards me taking long strides. Once he reached me, he kept both of his hands on the hand rest and lowered down glaring at me.

“What do you think you are doing here?” He asked in a low tone but anger evident clearly in his voice.

I was confused on what he was asking but choose to keep my mouth shut.

“Do you think we are playing games here? Did you forget what I did to you? To your family. To that mutt whom you were going to marry?” He spat venomously talking about Emmett.

My heart swelled up thinking about Emmett. Its already been three days since I have been here and I got no information on what happened to him and my family.

“I can never forget” I spoke in a low tone but at the same time glaring at him while my eyes got watery.

He smirked seeing my expression and stood straight adjusting his black coat.

“Good that you didn’t forget,” he said as he dragged the chair next to me and sat down on it while Whitney came into the room serving us our food.

My hunger was lone gone. I could no longer eat when I think about Emmett. How can I eat when the love of my life to whom I loved with my whole heart went limp on my own arms and I couldn't even do anything to save him. I don't even have any idea if he was alive or... I don't even want to think anything like that.

"First of all, you ruined my life" I found myself talk when he ate his food not even bothering to pay any attention to my presence.

"Secondly, you married me. Forcefully" my voice was low while I stared at my food not even wanting to touch it.

"Then you killed him. Before my own eyes," my voice broke as a tear slid down my cheeks.

"Do you have any idea how much I loved him?"

"Do you have any idea what I must be feeling right now not able to see my parents who probably haven't touched a grain worrying for me"

"I don't even have any idea what wrong did I do to you to get all this. At least let me know what was my mistake that you came like a storm into my life and ruined everything."

By this time I began to cry. I sobbed and took the tissue from the table and wiped away the tears that were flowing down my eyes.

I heard him muttering something under his breath. And the next moment my eyes widened.

Before me was his mobile phone. He kept his phone more like slammed his phone before me and began to eat his food.

"You have got only five minutes" he spoke his voice emotionless as he ate his food as usually not even bothering to look towards me.

Hurriedly I took the phone and dialed my mother's number. I was feeling really happy. It ringed and my heart began to beat rapidly. It rang three to four times and then it got disconnected.

"What the-" was my only expression as I looked at the phone with a blank expression.

She freaking disconnected the call.

I looked towards Zachary to find him eating a food with a calm expression.

Clearing my throat, I tried to call again. I dialed her number again, thinking maybe I dialed the wrong one the first time. It began to ring and mentally I prayed her to pick it up.

But to my absolute irritation, she disconnected the call again for the second time.

"No! No! Mom, what the heck are you doing?" I whispered rubbing my forehead.

"You've got three minutes left" I heard his irritating voice from beside me.

"The f***, " I thought to myself.

This time I dialed my brother's number. I am sure he is gonna pick up as soon as it rings.

I dialed his number and waited for it to get connected. But to my absolute shock, it was sent to his voice mail.

"Damn!" I exclaimed as I began to panic.

"Two minutes le-"

"Yeah! Yeah! I know I know" I exclaimed cutting him off and looked towards him to find him already looking at me from the corner of his eyes with a smirk on his face. He was enjoying seeing me in distress.

"Kiara!" I said out of nowhere.

She will surely pick up.

Hurriedly I tried to remember her number.

"Damn these phones have made us weak," I thought when I was unable to recall her number. But finally, I did remember her number. So getting little excited I dialed her number praying the non-existence Angels to help me.

It begun to ring and fortunately she picked up only in three rings.

"Hello?" Her voice sounded tired.

"Kiara? Kiara! Its me! Juliette!" I screamed excited and at the same time relieved.

"Uh! Umm" was her only answer.

"Kiara?" I questioned. I thought she would have been getting excited or happy hearing me but her expression made me filled with anxiety.

"Who Juliette?" She asked and I huffed out air unbelievably.

"Kiara this is not the time to joke. Listen to m-" I was growing impatient now but she cut me off "I told you I don't know anyone with the name Juliette. Please stop all this and do not call me ever again" with that she hung up on me.

"No! Kiara! Wait!" She didn't even bother to hear me.

"Kiara! Kiara!" I called but the line was end. I was totally shocked. Not in any way the woman to whom I talked was not Kiara. It was Kiara. It was her voice.

Why the hell did she reacted like this?

She doesn't know me?

Tears formed in the corner of my eyes thinking that she was kind of betraying my friendship but then again this all didn't make any sense.

What made her like this towards me?

Why was she treating me, her only best friend with her cold shoulder?

What actually happened?

What the heck was going on in my life?

Every people who were closed to me were distancing themselves away from me.

Before I could dial again, the phone was snatched away from my hand.

“Time up!” He interfered my train of thoughts taking the phone away from me.

Then it striked me.

“Wait! Is this your doing?” I asked slowly and suspiciously.

“What?” He raised his eyebrow.

“Are you behind all this?” I asked and glared at him when I noticed the smug look on his stupid face.

“Maybe” was his only answer.

“How dare you?” I stood up angrily as I glared at him while he wiped his mouth using the napkin.

“Why are you doing this?” I yelled while he didn’t even pay any attention to me.

“What the hell did you do with them?” I yelled as tears fell down on my shirt.

“Answer me” I yelled when he stood up keeping that stupid phone into his pant pocket.

“Nothing. Relax! They are fine and will be fine as long as you” he trailed a finger on my tear stained face with a satisfied expression on his face, completing his previous sentence “Behave”.

“I am not your dog” I slapped his hand away and watched as a irritating smile formed on his lips taunting me.

He looked beyond satisfied. As if he enjoyed watching me cry.

“I hate you!” I exclaimed while he stood there silently watching me with a smirk plastered on his face.

“Of course you do sweetie” he exclaimed.

“And this is how I want you to always feel for me” he completed and with that he turned his back on me and walked out of the room.

“I hate you. I hate you” I screamed to his retreating back angrily, wiping away the flowing tears.

“Do you hear me? I hate you. I just hate you” I screamed even more.

I cried and fell on the chair sobbing silently. As I wiped the tears away from my face I looked up towards the room end to find Whitney standing their with a sympathetic look on her face.

I wiped away the tears and got up from the chair, walking back towards my room.

My appetite was lost.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 8

Juliette Pov

“How can you tell that?” He asked as his eyes twinkled mischievously and he smiled at my impatient look.

“I know everything about you. Now give it to me” I said as I raised my hands to take that gift which he was holding.

He brought a gift for me but the problem was he was finding it more of a fun to tease me by not giving it to me.

“Nope. I won’t” he said as he raised the box higher in the air. I stood on my tip toe trying to get it but couldn’t because of the height difference.

“Emmett!” I scowled at him and gave up crossing my hands over my chest frustrated.

“Fine! I am going” I said as I began to walk and as soon as I heard him shout for me to wait I inwardly smiled. This was the trick.

“Don’t you want the gift?” He asked following me.

I shook my head negatively and looked around the park to find children running everywhere playing with each other. Their laughter echoed in my ear and I smiled looking at them.

“Aww! But I brought for you” he pouted and I stopped in my tracks glaring at him.

“And You are not giving it to me,” I said and he smiled. He came to me and stood behind my back wrapping his muscular arms around me he gave that box to me.

I smiled and took it from him. While I unwrapped the box he kept his head on my right shoulder, his stubble touching my cheek and I could feel his hot breath fanning my ear.

“Oh my god!” I clamped my hand over my mouth.

Tears pooled my eyes and I couldn’t believe my own eyes.

Inside the box was a very elegant and expensive yet traditional necklace and it was not just some necklace, it was his mother’s necklace.

It was his family’s traditional which was passed down to every generation, to every new bride.

“It’s It’s..” I stammered not finding words to describe how beautiful the necklace was.

“Beautiful?” He completed for me and I nodded smiling as I trailed my finger over the jewellery.

“But not as beautiful as you are,” he said his cheesy line and I blushed but nevertheless elbowed him lightly on his rib.

“But I don’t understand. Why are you giving this me?” I questioned as I turned around to face him.

He gave me a wholehearted smile and I raised my eyebrow questionably.

“Do you know why I love you so much?” He asked and I gave him a blank look.

“Because” he kept his hands on my shoulders and bent down maintaining our eye level “You are so innocent and naive. So pure” he told me and I couldn’t help but blush deep red at his comment.

I felt him kiss my cheeks and the next moment I found him kneeling on one leg on the ground.

I gasped as my heart rate spiked thinking about the possibilities that were going to happen.

“Ms. Juliette Swanson will you please do the honor to marry this Mr. Hot jerk as you call me” I chuckled at this “to complete him, to mend him, to make him a better person?”

By this time happy tears were flowing down my cheeks and I couldn’t believe that the day I dreamt of was finally happening before me.

“Ms. Juliette Swanson, will you marry me?” He asked and I broke out of my state of surprise nodding slowly but as I was giving him my hand the place surrounding us started to change and I looked around to find myself in a church where people were standing looking at me sympathetically.

I frowned looking at their expressions. But as soon as my eyes looked down to where they were looking my breath hitched and I couldn’t breathe properly because of shock.

There I saw a woman who looked just like me wearing a bloodied wedding dress crying and screaming at no other one but Emmett.

He lied on the floor, his head rested on that woman’s lap as blood oozed out from his body and stained the floor.

“Emmett!” I heard the look-alike of me cry.

“Emmett!” She cried, even more, when he began to close his eyes.

“Emmett!” I screamed running to him.

But it was as if I wasn’t reaching to him. The more I ran the far they looked. Slowly everything began to change around me and I cried it to stop. Desperation was flooding into me.

I was desperate to reach him. My only desire was to touch him.

“No!” I screamed as the scene before me began to fade.

“No! Emmett!”

“Emmett” I screamed as I woke up gasping and panting for air.

Beads of sweat formed on my forehead and on my neck which I had to wipe it away using the back of my hand.

"Another nightmare" I spoke to myself as I rubbed my face in frustration. I have been seeing these nightmares since that day, my supposed to be wedding day.

My hands stretched out towards my left towards the nightstand for the water jug.

It wasn't there.

Sighing I got up after ten minutes when I felt my throat burning. I needed water.

So I got up from my bed and walked towards the door. It wasn't locked. Much to my relief or I would have panicked.

I walked out of the room and slowly looked around for anyone. When I found no one I walked dragging my feet towards the kitchen. I was feeling really exhausted.

It was as if those nightmares sucked up all my energy.

As soon I got there, I pulled out a glass from the cupboard and poured water from the jug. I gulped it down my throat and instantly felt relaxed.

I closed my eyes and stood there until I felt my breath turning normal.

Again I poured water into my now empty glass and drank it when I felt someone behind me.

I looked back only to find no one other than the Devil himself. The real cause of all my nightmares and sufferings.

I glared at him and he raised an eyebrow shoving his hands into his pant pockets.

"What are you doing here at this time of the night?" He asked as he took small steps walking towards me.

I remained rooted to my position and continued glaring at him.

"Nightmare?" He answered his question probably seeing my state.

"Thanks to you" I whispered to myself but I think he heard me because he cleared his throat and took a glass for himself and poured water in it.

He drank his water while I drank the rest of water from my glass.

"I need to buy some clothes for you" I heard him whisper and I raised an eyebrow at him then looked down to what I was wearing.

Then I realized what he meant.

"Oh shit!" I cursed and looked up at him to find him looking towards the chair.

“Thank God!” I thought to myself and slowly walked backward towards the door. As soon as I reached the door I turned around and ran back towards my room. I closed the door and leaned against it. Keeping a hand against my rising and falling chest, I tried to control my breath.

How can I be so stupid?

I walked out just wearing purple shorts which had white polka dots on it and a purple tank top with nothing underneath it.

Thankfully my breast was hidden behind my hair.

But still, how could I walk like this in a strange place.

“Ahhh!” I pulled my hair feeling little embarrassed.

This is all his fault.

This was all his fault from the beginning.

I had no other option but to wear this as I didn’t have any other clothes to wear. It is what I got from that wardrobe and I wore it because I couldn’t roam around naked.

I composed myself and walked back to my bed. I crawled back into my bed and lied down on my belly and stuffed my head into the pillow.

“Is it necessary for you to embarrass yourself before him every time?” I scolded myself and flipped back staring blankly at the ceiling fan.

“Please Don’t fall on me” I found myself talking to the damn nonliving ceiling fan.

It’s squeaking sound disturbed me, giving me a headache and at the same time made me worried.

“Fall on him” I spoke pointing towards the door.

“Fall on his head then maybe he will get some senses into his thick skull” I spoke and stretched my hands and legs.

“I hate him and you should also hate him. He is not repairing you after all. What is your life?” I yawned and rubbed my eyes feeling sleepy.

“Squeak! Squeak! Squeak! is all that you do” I turned to my side wrapping my hands around myself.

“Stupid Zachary”

“Stupid Ceiling fan”

I drifted off to sleep.

You both can go to hell.

Xxxx

Chapter 9

Juliette Pov

I sat there wrapping my duvet around my with wide eyes as I watched a group of a man entering my room after knocking two to three times.

My eyes fluttered open after I heard some knocking sounds on my door.

Without thinking I gave the permission to the person to Come in guessing it to be Whitney and closed my eyes sleeping back. But then I heard some sounds and my eyes fluttered open only to find a group of a man entering into my room with some bags and some boxes keeping it on the floor.

“Wha- What are you all doing?” I asked as I broke out of the shock and wrapped the duvet more firmly to cover my body.

“Sorry for disturbing Ma’am but Mr. Sullivan asked us to keep all these boxes in your room” one of them spoke and turned around leaving the room.

I watched as more of them came into my room and they kept some other boxes before scurrying out of the room.

By this time my room was full of bags and boxes. I couldn’t even see the floor. The room was that packed.

When all of them left I stood on the bed finding no place to walk on the floor. I took out the rubber band from my hand and hurriedly tied all my messy hair into a ponytail and took the cardigan from the bedside wearing it covering myself.

“What the hell is all this?” I whispered as I shook my head and kept a hand on my hips.

The door flew open and in walked with all his glory Zachary eyeing all the boxes and nodding to himself satisfied. He looked fresh. His hair was neatly combed back and it was still wet probably from his shower. He was wearing a full sleeved black plain shirt with his coat hanging on his arms and as always with a black pant and black shiny shoes.

“What the hell is all this and can’t you knock before coming in?” I asked crossing my arms over my chest and glared at him.

“Last time I checked, it was supposed to be my place,” he said and I rolled my eyes looking up biting my inner side of my mouth.

“I can walk in wherever and whenever I want. I don’t need permission” he said and I scowled at his foolishness and chewed my inner side so harder that I swore I could feel bloody taste from that chewing.

“Oh yeah? Didn’t your Mother teach you to knock before entering a woman’s room?” I spoke sweetly. Very sweetly.

“Whatever!” He murmured and I huffed thinking that it was supposed to be mine line, not his.

“And what the hell are you standing on that bed?” He asked looking up at me and I shrugged pointing towards the boxes.

“What are all these?” I asked shockingly politely.

He sighed and looked around all of the boxes.

“This are your necessities,” he told me and I furrowed my eyebrows confused.

“Necessities?” I questioned.

“Clothes and all,” he said and the way he eyed at my bare legs I swore to god I felt little nervous. His gaze was intense and his eyes roamed on my legs before looking up.

“Eyes up here Mister” I spoke Icily making him snap out of his little world.

“Right!” He cleared his throat looking elsewhere and then checked the time on his watch.

“Keep whatever you want and check if you need anything else. If you do then give a list of your things to Whitney” he told me and turned around to leave.

“Wait!” I spoke up and he stopped turning back raising his eyebrows questionably.

“I don’t need all this, even more ” I said as I gripped my Cardigan tightly.

“And why is that?” He asked crossing his hands across his chest.

“I don’t want anything from you okay. Isn’t that obvious? I don’t even know why the hell did you even marry me. You even kept me here away from everyone and God only knows what you did to them that now they are even denying that they even know me” I pushed back the hair out of my face angrily and walked towards him. The bed squeaked whenever I took a step.

“If anything I want from you then that will be Freedom. Freedom from you and Freedom from this place. Freedom from all my nightmares. Do you understand?” I spoke pointing a finger towards his direction.

“Listen! I have had enough already. Don’t start again with your Drama” he said and gave me a bored look which ignited my anger.

“Drama?” I snapped and walked, even closer to him with my blood boiling.

“Why yo-” my foot slipped and I lost my balance falling towards the ground. I closed my eyes and gasped when I felt a pair of arms wrapping around my torso and the next moment I found myself hanging in mid air.

Slowly opening my eyes I looked at the owner of those strong arms only to find him holding me by my torso saving me from the fall.

My feet were still on the bed while I clutched his collar fearing that I might end up on the floor if I let go.

“At least watch where you walk” he spoke up and I couldn’t get myself from opening my eyes.

It was my fault.

“I think I should not have caught you,” he said and he loosened his grip on me scaring the hell out of me.

“No!” I yelled clutching his shirt even more tightly and closed my eyes waiting for the impact.

I heard a chuckle and I opened my eyes slowly only to be held mesmerized by those brown orbs which did something unusual to my heart.

I felt a spark on the place wherever he touched me and surprisingly I wasn’t hating it. Those cold and deep brown orbs looked so mysterious and secretive. It was like he was hiding a sea of mystery behind his warm self-making him into a secretive yet ruthless person.

“Listen to me” he spoke up and I broke out of my little world a bit startled that I was caught staring.

“Choose whatever you like and pack all your stuff. We would be flying to my home in a day” he said and I found myself nodding but then realization hit me hard and I glared back at him.

“I am not going anywhere with you,” I told him and even tried to choke him clutching his shirt even more tightly.

He smirked at me and raised an eyebrow then the next moment he threw me back on the bed and I yelled startled. I bounced a little on the bed which made some squeaking noises and I held my head feeling little dizzy.

“What the heck?” I snapped and took a pillow throwing it at him which he dodged easily and threw it back on the bed.

“Choose some decent clothes unless you want to roam around naked,” he told me and I looked at him with wide eyes shocked. My mouth opens and closed like a fish. I felt my cheeks burning and I gritted my teeth.

“And don’t flatter yourself thinking that I would even notice your body. I have seen better for your kind information. You will only make me want to hit my head hard on the wall for such” he gestured using his hand towards my body “such you know what I mean”.

He freaking insulted me?

He freaking insulted a woman and that also me?

“Get lost!” I pointed my finger towards the door and he gave me his idiotic smirk and satisfied look before turning around walking out of my room.

I got up from the bed and jumped up from the boxes hurriedly running into the bathroom.

I stripped naked and stood in front of the mirror inspecting my body from every direction.

“Am I not attractive?” I asked to myself as I posed into a hot posture.

Last time I checked I never had to ask this question to myself. Ever.

Kiara and even Emmett always told me that I had an attractive figure. An attractive feminine silhouette.

My breasts were not that big as any bimbo but it looked good with round and full figure. My stomach was toned and flat because all of my Yoga and my butt was also not that big but it was enough what a man would want.

“He is not a man” I snapped pointing a finger at the mirror.

“Bloody hell he hurt my ego and confidence” I even screamed shouting at top of my lungs.

“Seen better” I mimicked his tone and kept my hands on my hips.

“I have seen better” I threw my hands in the air as I stepped into the shower and turning it on.

As the water touched my body I began to think whose body have I seen who can even compete with his.

“Emmett was good but I think Zac-” I hit my head “What is wrong with you? You are freaking comparing that egoistic man to your Emmett?” I scolded myself and shook my head turning the shower into cold one.

“He is just a Stupid egoistic man who needs to learn how to be polite to everyone. Basically women. Especially me” I spoke to myself as I kept on ranting and shook my head at all his negativity which I suffered.

“Zachary Stupid Dog Sullivan” I grumbled to myself as I turned off the shower and wore the bathrobe throwing all my wet hair towards a side.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 10

Unknown Pov

There is only one thing which I hated the most in this world and it was getting defeated.

As I looked towards the magnificent painting of a demon which hung in front of my bed on the wall, I couldn't just help but to feel worthless for getting defeated.

The demon in the picture looked so real, it was as if it was watching me through the painting. It's eye matched the one whose I feared the most. My Grandfather's eye. The demon with its intense green eye, black body and black with shades of red and green aura was the true personality of my Grandfather. My Grandfather was the one who taught me how to be ruthless, greedy and a powerful mean. He was my mentor. He turned me into this self-obsessed man and truthfully I am glad that he turned me like this or else I would've buried under the ground a long time ago.

The painting was made by a fellow friend of my Grandfather. According to him, he brought my Grandfather's personality into his painting. And I was sure those who had witnessed my Grandfather's wrath wouldn't deny the fact that this painting truly mirrored his personality.

I sighed as I tried to move on the bed and sat on a sit up position leaning against the headboard and wincing when I felt a sharp pang on my the side of my stomach.

"Darn" I hissed in pain and touched the place when I felt it getting wet. Just as I thought, I raised the shirt from my stomach and the touched the area where I felt the pain, my finger touched the blood that was certainly oozing out from the wound that I got just a few days back.

The blood on my finger reminded me of my Defeat. A word that I loathed the most in this world.

"Defeat" I found myself muttering the word wiping the blood out of my finger using the tissue from my bedside.

I would've been dead if my Grandfather were alive right now. He would've killed me with his own hand seeing me in this condition. A part of me actually relieved that today he wasn't there in this world to witness my condition or else god only knew what he would have done first to me then to the person who was responsible for this wound.

I ran a hand through my hair and then bent a little, hissing on the effort and pressed the bell calling of my servant.

A few seconds later a man hurried in almost huffing and panting clearly showing that he ran all the way to reach me as quickly he can. He bowed his head and composed himself, his black hair falling on his forehead as he sweated badly which showed his nervousness.

“Where is Denvar?” I asked the young man who wasn’t responsible for the call that I just did.

“Uh Father is away for some work given by Madam herself” he managed to speak and the word Father caught my attention.

“Denvar is your father?” I asked as I gulped down the water from the glass wanting to ease my thirst.

“Yes, Sir. He is my father” he replied in a low voice.

“I see. How old are you?” I asked shocked by myself that I was even interested to know. Maybe the fact that I was alone and bedridden from the past few days made me ask all those stupid questions to the boy much to his discomfort. He looked like he wanted to get out of my room as soon as he could.

“Se-Seventeen. I am Seventeen Sir” he spoke stuttering and I nodded.

“Too young,” I thought.

“Bring me my food. I am hungry and make sure to bring me a glass of red wine. Also, ask Mother to pay me a visit” I ordered him and he nodded but stood there not moving an inch.

“What is it?” I questioned.

“Madam has strictly ordered us not to serve you wine till you get better S-Sir” he spoke with fear evident in his voice.

“Just go and bring what I told you” I barked and within a second he was out of my sight.

I huffed and leaned back on the headboard. Using the remote control I lowered the temperature of the air conditioner suddenly feeling hot.

God! The medications and its side effects are killing me.

Suddenly my phone rang and I furrowed my eyebrows before picking up the call from a certain unexpected person.

“I see you are now in a condition to speak” the man chuckled when I picked up the call.

“Shut up and just speak up What is it?” I asked rubbing my forehead.

“Well Hello to you too. Should I take as the gratitude from the person whom I saved from dying a few days ago?” He replied sarcastically and I rolled my eyes at his comment.

“Willi I am certainly not in a mood to chit chat with you right now. I see you don’t have anything important to tell so I’m hanging up” I was ready to click on that End call button but stopped when I heard him speak.

“I certainly do have something very important to tell you” he spoke in his serious tone and almost immediately I gave him my whole attention.

Willi Simmel was my right hand who is a German but at very young age he was trained by my Grandfather's companion in order to accompany me as my trusted Man. In personality, he was the most cunning and intelligent man. He would sense problems before it came in our way and would smartly have some ideas to destroy those problems or to avoid it by some ways. But as far as I have known him he was the most secretive man one would ever meet. Nobody would ever find his trace whenever a crime is suspected. God only knows how he makes his way out of them.

Unfortunately very few people like Willi Simmel, but the fact he's greedy and insensitive is just the tip of the iceberg. Nobody's perfect of course and Willi has a share of darker sides to deal with too. His irrational nature and amoral nature don't make for the greatest company, though more on a personal level than for others. Fortunately, his practical thinking assures this isn't the case very often. To make matters worse he's also possessive, disrespectful and narrow-minded, but in an odd way, they're balanced by habits of being balanced as well.

But focus on him as this is what he's notorious. Even the best intentions have been soured because of this and his dishonesty, but different strokes for different folks I guess.

Unfortunately, his insensitivity is usually lurking and ready to spoil the fun. There are so many negative things about him yet there is something which makes him the most trusty man one would ever trust his life over.

"Speak up," I told him.

"Well, actually I have two news for you. One is good and another is the opposite. So choose one" he sounded annoyed for some reason.

"The Bad one first" I spoke readily to face the bad news.

"Hmm. The bad news is... Freddy got caught" he told me and almost immediately I clenched my teeth with anger.

One more defeat.

"And the good news?" I asked impatiently.

"Well, the Good news is I found a way to reach him".

My lips twitched up. That was Willi always had his fair share of solutions and always ready for the problems.

"So what are you waiting for? Finish everything and make sure nothing is tracked or spilled" I told him and he hummed in response.

"I am already working on it. I will do this by myself" he told me and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion.

“You? Why will you do this? You know this is risky. Send some other ma-” he cut me off “Freddy was the best man we had. And unfortunately, he got caught. Do you think any other man in his place will ever return back doing it, with a victory?” He questioned and true to his words I found myself nodding in agreement.

“Fine. Make sure to clear the coast. And when you reach to Freddy don’t forget to tell him that I will miss him” I sighed as I said the words. It was a way of mine to tell him that Freddy was no longer needed. Sure, he was also the most trusty man here and I have been with him from god knows what year but still he managed to caught by our rivalry and now before he could spill anything which could be dangerous for us he needs to close his mouth. Forever.

“I will also miss him” I heard Willi sighing in the phone.

Willi was never from the kind of person who would ever show emotions for anyone.

“Give him a less painful death,” I told him and with that, I hung up.

I threw the phone on the bed and looked up at the ceiling. My gaze again fell on the painting which was before me.

“Yet again I have to be the type of person that you have made me. Following your footsteps, I have reached this far in my life. I hope you are happy with me” I spoke to the painting and closed my eyes for a few seconds when the door of my room opened and I heard the clicking of heels.

Without opening my eyes I knew who was the person.

“How many times do I need to tell you? Knock before you walk in Mother?” I asked as I opened my eyes and looked at the woman dressed in an elegant black gown with hair made into in a neat bun. Always in her high-class appearance.

Her black cold eyes similar to mine bore into mine as she made her way towards me and sat on the chair beside me crossing her leg over another.

“I don’t need my son’s permission to enter his room” she spoke as she crossed her hands over another on her lap waiting for me to speak.

“I am grown man now Mother and I would mind my privacy,” I told her to which she rolled her eyes and the next moment smacked me on my head.

“Ow! What was that for?” I asked as I rubbed the spot which she hit.

“For disobeying my orders” she yelled and I gave her a confused look.

“You asked for wine? Didn’t you?” She spoke calmly although I knew she was way more than just calm.

“Ahh I am bored Mother just by sitting here the whole day,” I told her irritated and stressed my hand a little feeling sleep flooding back into me.

Stupid Medicines.

“It is all your doing son. You get what you deserve according to your karma. Just look at yourself what your father and grandfather have made you today. I am still telling you to plea-”

“Mother please” I pleaded.

“We already had this discussion before. I am into this in my own will. It’s because I wanted this. I wanted to be a powerful man Mother” I told her and watched as she sighed closing her eyes muttering something under her breath.

“Fine! I was just doing my duty. I love you son you know that right?” She asked with watery eyes.

“Yes mother I do,” I told her and gave her a small smile.

“Then remember this seeing you like this always breaks my heart but still I will support you. As long as my children are safe I will always support them” she spoke and her motherly love reflected in her eyes before it turned into those cold and distant ones which always confused me.

“And for now rest as much as you can. I want to see my son completely fit and fine back on his feet” she kissed my forehead and arranged the pillows around me.

“I will send you your food. And” she got hold of my ear “No Wine” she ordered strictly and I nodded taking her hand which was holding my ear, kissing her hand.

She smiled and turned around walking out of my room but before she could walk out she stopped and turned around.

“And Nicholas” she called me and I looked up towards her waiting for her to continue.

“I would’ve really liked if that girl Juliette would’ve been your bride. The way you described me about her I truly liked her but Alas! Destiny had something different to what you planned. She never got to be your wife”.

“I don’t want to discuss it mother” I clenched my teeth and balled my palms into fists.

“Because it reminds you about your defeat” she mocked and chose to keep my mouth shut.

“Poor girl. I wonder what she might be doing right now with her husband” she looked towards me with her mischievous eyes.

“I don’t care about her Mother so please stop worrying about her” I spoke through gritted teeth and watched as she smirked at me.

“I wonder if she is still oblivious to the fact that her ex fiance’s name is not Emmett but” she looked towards me to which I raised an eyebrow.

“But Nicholas Greer”.

She grinned at me and turned around walking out of my room.

I rolled my eyes and switched on the tv flipping through channels.

“Don’t worry mother she will still find it out. Soon” I spoke to myself and smirked.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 11

Juliette Pov

I walked back into my room after taking a shower. My body tensed seeing the boxes in my room. Sighing, I made my way towards the wardrobe with great difficulties because of the boxes and managed to pick out a floral print skirt which ended just below my knee and a black blouse.

Still, no briefs to wear.

I wore it and quickly tied my hair into a messy bun. Then I looked towards the boxes and pressed my mouth into a thin line thinking where to start from.

I thought to start from the smaller boxes. So, Jumping on the boxes I reached the middle where I saw the smaller boxes. I took one of them and using the pen that I found inside the wardrobe I tore its tape and opened the box to find just what I was looking.

Briefs.

I took out a garment and checked its size.

It was mine size.

I smiled and took out a black lacey bra and an underwear and ran into the bathroom to wear it.

Back in my room it took a hour to sort out all the smaller boxes. Some had make up things while some have jewelries. I took out a luggage bag and packed the necessities. Now it was time for the bigger boxes.

I took the pen and tore one of the box only to find clothes. There were many type of clothes. I took out two to three jump suits and some playsuits. I threw aside the mini skirts and the crop tops.

So finally I decided to take some Jumpsuits, playsuits, jeans, tops, gowns, shifter dress, and some shirts.

I packed it all and looked back to one more box left.

I tore open the box and found shoes.

I took out a slipper again perfectly fitting me. I wonder how he knew my size. Then I took out a black stiletto and vans. I packed it and found the bag fully packed. I closed it with utmost difficulty and sat on the bed feeling tired. Then I looked at the mess in my room.

So I got up and kept all the boxes outside of my room. I was now able to breathe properly. The boxes in my room left no space for me to breathe properly. After I was done, I kept the heavy

bag at the side of the bed and made the bed properly, changed the bed-sheet, taking a clean one from the wardrobe.

After I was done, I flopped onto the bed on my stomach and felt little relaxed. I wasn't feeling sleepy at all. I was just tired and hungry now.

He told me that he was going to take me to his family. I wonder what is his family like.

Sure I already have guessed it that he belongs to the mafia world so that means his family is also involved with him. In no way a family will ever remain oblivious to the fact that one of their member is a cruel, ruthless mafia man who orders others using his gun point.

So I need to bear his mafia family too?

I am sure everyone in his family must be like him. Cold and cruel. Its funny how every word that starts from the letter C perfectly fits his personality. Of course his negative personalities.

The door of my room opened and I looked back over my shoulder to find Whitney holding a tray.

I instantly sat on my bed happily. She smiled at me and brought me my food. She placed it before me and bowed before walking out of the room. I munched on my food realizing how hungry I was. After I was done I took the plate and kept it on the tray and began to walk towards the door.

As I came out of my room, I found the boxes that I kept their previously disappeared. With a shrug, I headed towards the kitchen. I kept the dishes in the sink and turned around to leave but then stopped thinking I didn't have any other work to do. So I turned around and began to wash all the dishes wanting to save myself from the boredom.

"What are you doing?" I heard Whitney and looked towards her to find her looking at me in shock.

"Uh washing the dishes" I stated the obvious.

"No No!" she exclaimed horrified as she ran to me.

"You are not supposed to that" she tried to take the plate away from my hand.

"But why? I am just washing the dishes. Whats the big deal in it?" I asked confused.

"The big deal is you are not the maid. She is" I looked towards the kitchen door to find Zachary standing and glaring at Whitney.

"What's your problem?" I asked.

"I already told you that she must not be doing all this. Didn't I?" he asked Whitney ignoring me.

"So what is she doing here?" he took menacing steps towards us and I looked at Whitney to find her standing with her head down and trembling.

What's going on?

"Wait!" I jumped in and stood before Whitney.

"She didn't even knew that I was in here washing all this and its not her fault. I did it because I wanted to because whenever I was free or bored I would always help my mom in my house chores" I said

"This is not your house that you will do whatever you want" he snapped making me flinch.

"This is my house and here whatever I say is final. You have to do what I say whether you like it or not"

"And we are leaving. Now" he said and left the room leaving both of us in the kitchen room.

"Nobody ever talked to me like that ever and I can never forget that this is not my house" I spoke to myself but was sure that Whitney heard me. I walked out of the kitchen and headed towards my room.

I got ready for the travelling. I didn't even know where I was going. So I decided on wearing a black classic fit T-shirt and a black knee ripped skinny jeans with flat black boots. I wore a loose sweater and made my hair into a neat ponytail. I took a scarf and covered my head and took a sunglass with me. As I got ready, I kept on thinking where I was going. I was certainly sure that he must be living in a place were crime percentage must be higher than any other place. After all he belongs to the mafia and living in such a place like that isn't something new.

There was a knock on the door and then the door opened to reveal Whitney. She came inside with a glass of juice.

"Oh Thank you Whitney I needed it" I told her and gladly accepted the glass from her and drank the juice.

"It looks like its our last meet Madam" she told me and I nodded sadly keeping the empty glass on the nightstand.

"Don't worry I will try to meet you soon" I told her to which she gave me a small smile nodding in response.

"Thank you for saving me back there. I was thinking that I was going to loose this job. It would've been very difficult for me if I lost this job. This job allows me to pay my rent and bills" she looked sad while speaking. I held her shoulder and gave it a small squeeze assuring her that everything was okay now.

"Don't worry Zachary won't fire you" I told her and she nodded.

"Let's go Madam. Sir has asked for you with your luggage and I am here to take you".

I nodded biting on my lips.

“Don’t worry Madam I can see the tension between and him. But whatever it is I can assure you that he will take care of you” she told me and I scoffed inwards.

“He will take care of me. What a joke” I thought but nevertheless gave her a half smile.

I took my bag and followed Whitney out of the room but stopped and looked back at the room.

“I will never miss you” I spoke to myself recalling the time how I was brought here and was locked inside it. With that I turned around and walked following Whitney. We walked out of the house and I saw Zachary talking to some of his men outside of the house. As soon as he saw us he signaled someone far away for the car and continued talking to those men. As the Car pulled by before us I couldn’t but help myself from hugging Whitney for the last time. Well it was apparently my first and last time actually because God only knew if I was going to live or not to see the daylights when I reach his real house. They may kill me. Who knows?

“Take care” I whispered to which she responded softly “You too”.

I pulled away from her and smiled at her to which she returned with her own smile. I saw one of the man loading our luggage while Zachary didn’t even bother for me to sit inside. He went inside before me. I sighed and got inside the car sitting as far as possible from him. As the driver ignited the engine I rolled down the window and waved at Whitney. She waved smiling and soon I lost her sight.

I rolled up the window and sat back on my seat sighing. It’s funny what my life was playing with me. What I planned with my life, what I thought to do but it came out completely opposite to it in reality.

I looked outside of the window. The speed of the car blurring the scenery. I looked to my side to find him looking out of the window, seating casually as if nothing ever happened in his life. He was calm and he looked relaxed. I wonder what was going on inside his evil mind. Probably thinking ways to kill people or to destroy lives. How can a human be such demonic? Doesn’t he ever feel other people’s emotion?

“Useless” I muttered gritting my teeth and as he was about to turn towards me I turned towards the window avoiding his gaze.

Soon after an hour we reached the airport.

Cairo International Airport.

So we are in Cairo.

Its a shame that I didn’t get any chance to jaunt around the capital of Egypt. The airport was the busiest place and I could see as people hurried in for their flights.

“Wear your glasses” I heard him and not wanting to create a scene I wore the black sunglasses and adjusted the scarf on my head.

We walked in while I tried to match his long strides, stumbling a few times and him glaring at me, I rolled my eyes not bothering about the consequences because I knew he couldn't see my eyes through my glasses. A man behind us wheeled our luggage while another one looked here and there. Judging by their looks and body, I knew they were his bodyguards.

"Sit here and no drama" he told me and went away with one of the bodyguard leaving one behind with me. I sat on the chair in the waiting room and waited for him to come back.

After few minutes, he came back and we boarded the plane. I guess we were going in a normal plane this time.

I never tried to escape but now I am thinking to change the fact.

While entering the airport I saw many police officers. I could easily get help from them or maybe if I get to inform one of the air attendants then I think they might help me by informing the police. But for that I need to remain extra cautious. Because I was dealing with a Mafia man.

I was wary all the time when we were boarding and when we reached the plane. I tried to get some attention from the officers but when they looked at me they smiled at me like I was a normal passenger. I huffed at them and even was ready to run to them but if it wasn't for Zachary holding my wrist all the time.

When we entered the plane, it was my time. I thought maybe I could inform the air hostess but Zachary didn't forget to pull me with him by my waist.

"Jerk!"

He made me sit on the window side and I clenched my jaw removing the sunglasses and scarf.

Now there was no way for me to escape.

"If you don't know then let me tell you this is my Plane" I heard his voice and I stiffened hearing it.

"I see your every chance to escape went in vain for you" He said in a calm tone but a hint of tease was evident which made my blood boil.

I balled my palms into a fist and clenched my jaw.

"Useless" I muttered but this time it was meant for me not for him.

After sitting for Two and half an hour we landed.

I came to know that we were going to Romania.

Avram Iancu Cluj International Airport.

It was a surprise for me to know that Cluj was his hometown in Romania. I knew about Cluj. Cluj was relatively less than any other place in level of crime and a man like Zachary lived here.

I thought maybe he belonged from England or maybe USA but I guess you can never judge anyone just from their name.

We were immediately circled by reporters as soon as we reached the airport.

“Mr Sullivan who is she?” one of them asked.

“Mr Sullivan is the rumor true that you got married secretly to your childhood sweetheart?” another one asked to which I scoffed at them.

“What is going on? Isn’t he a criminal? Then why is he surrounded by reporters like he is a celebrity?” I thought to myself.

“Is she the girl Mr Sullivan?”

“What was the reason for you get married secretly?”

They kept on shooting our pictures and bombarded us with questions which were utterly nuisance for me. Soon some guards encircled us and they pushed stubborn reporters out of the way.

“Mr Sullivan! Mr Sullivan please answer to us” The reporters shouted trying to get to us only to be blocked by the guards.

Somehow we managed to get out of the airport and we got into our car to which the reporters ran after us when the car began to move. As we left them behind I looked back at Zachary thinking he might answer what was going on there but as usually I found him busy typing something on his phone. I crossed my arms across my chest and kept my mouth shut and waited patiently to wherever he was taking me.

I have learnt one thing from the day I met him that he is the worst husband in this world.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 12

Juliette Pov

“Okay so here goes nothing” I mustered up the courage within me as we came to a halt before a huge mansion.

“Damn! They are rich” I thought as I looked towards the white mansion when we passed the main gate. The guards bowing in respect to Zachary who just raises his hand and gave a curt nod in response.

I began to fidget with my fingers as I felt the bile rising inside me.

“What now?” I thought.

Maybe as he said earlier his parents live here. That means they too have an idea about his business. More precisely underworld business.

I gulped at the thought that maybe they are too connected with the sinful business as he is and possibly the huge mansion before me is the result of their not so hardworking. My eyelashes began to flutter and shockingly every time they fluttered the white paint of the mansion looked red to my eyes. Probably my thoughts of thinking them as criminal.

I wonder what his parents really look like.

I wouldn’t be surprised if I find a dangerous looking man with few scar marks on his face and a cold personality standing next to him as Zachary’s parents.

The more we got closer towards the mansion the more wildly my heart beat began to rise and certainly it raise so much that I was able to hear my own heart beat. Anxiety was piling up inside me with full force. The only I wanted was a...

The car stopped before the entrance of the mansion and a man came to open the door of our car for us. Zachary was first to get out.

I kept sitting not moving. It wasn’t as if I could move or something because I was frozen. My legs and hands were cold and shaking due to anxiety building inside me. The soles of my shoes suddenly felt wet due to sweating.

“Come out” Zachary said as he looked inside the car towards me.

I shifted on my position and crawled towards the opened door to get out. As soon as my feet touched the ground I shivered due to chilled air. My legs wobbled and I held onto the car’s door to lift myself up.

“What’s wrong with you now?” Zachary asked and somewhat for a mere second I thought that perhaps he was being worried about me but immediately I was proven wrong.

“Don’t think that I’m going to carry you. You are heavy” he said and I swear to God in that moment the only think I wanted was to punch him hard on his face.

“Go to hell” I enunciated each word clearly and filled with venom.

The only think he did was to roll his eyes and he tugged his jacket and walked towards the door.

With utter difficulty I tried to stand straight and walked towards the entrance.

“So annoying” I heard him whisper and he even huffed at me.

“Moron” I cursed him in my mind. I made my way and stood next to him not knowing what to do.

“Ah! So you are my daughter-in-law, so pretty” I heard a feminine voice and turned towards the source to find a woman wearing a beige coloured plain gown with braided hair coming towards me. But what shocked me was the man coming after her. The man had black hair with pale skin tone. He had this smile plastered on his face as he joined his wife and together with linking arms both of them walked towards us or more precisely me.

“Oh dear look she has so pretty eyes” she said as she glanced at me from top to bottom and smiled warmly in admiration.

“Indeed” the man spoke.

“Mom” Zachary spoke from beside me and walked towards the woman who was his mother engulfing her in a hug.

“Oh dear! You look so thinner. Have you not taking care of your health lately?” his mother spoke worriedly as she roamed her palms on his face.

“Just work tension” he said as he kissed her hand which made her giggle.

“I see you didn’t even invite your parents let alone inform us about the wedding, son?” the man spoke rather more in a cold tone.

Now that made me shiver. The vibe of standing in the humongous mansion filled with dangerous people suddenly strike me hard on my face like a slap.

“I already told you. It was the situation” Zachary spoke through gritted teeth.

I wonder whats the deal between them. Zachary seemed more warmer towards his mother than his father.

“Oh now stop it you two. Let’s just forget what happened okay. It’s the first day of our daughter-in-law in our house and she has to see this?” his mother interfered and sighed pushing them aside.

“Now, never in my dreams have I thought that my son loved a woman so much that he chose to marry her not wanting to waste any time” she came towards me and in my mind I screamed “Love? What?”

“At first I was suspicious at the thought that Zachary married out of love. But now when I see this beautiful woman all my doubts are cleared. No wonder he chose to marry so suddenly” she grinned as she touched my face.

“But I don’t care whatever the situation they got married. I Julia Sullivan accept you my dear as my daughter-in-law. And” her eyes twinkled with happiness “we are going to have a reception party tomorrow. So it doesn’t matter that we couldn’t attend the wedding but the reception will be more wonderful you both can ever think of” she laughed as she looked towards her husband who nodded in apprehenciation.

“What?” Zachary and I spoke more like screamed at the same time.

“Reception party? But why Mom?” Zachary asked as he came near us.

“Why not? Aren’t you married? And I know you both never had the reception party. So I thought it would be good if we do it here. Our family will be here. We all can make merry. I am so happy that my son has found his other half” she said dreamingly as she smiled probably thinking ahead.

“But Mom-” he was cut off his father.

“Yes that will be good. I will just inform my friends” he took out his phone and began to scroll through his phone.

“Mom-” Zachary was again cut off but this time by his mother.

“I will hear nothing. I don’t understand why are you arguing so much. Do you not want people to know about your marriage? Do you not love your wife?” She asked looking dissapointed all of a sudden.

Zachary stopped what he was going to speak and his father looked up at him curiously eyeing him.

Then Zachary walked towards me and surprised me by wrapping his arm around my waist and pulling me tightly to him making me gasp in shock.

“Of course. I love her” he said and my eyes widen in shock. But none of them could see my shocked expression as I was looking at his hand which was wrapped around my waist like a python.

“Oh then the party is final. And look at us we haven’t even introduced ourselves. I’m sure that Zachary must have told you about us but still out of courtesy I am his mother Julia Sullivan” she said and smiled at me which I returned with a polite one of mine.

“And I am Gale Sullivan. His father” he came and stood beside his wife with a small smile on his face.

“Hello, nice to meet you two” I said politely and they smiled nodding at each other.

“Okay I know you two must be tired so go to your room. I have already set it for you two. From today your life begins” she looked dreamingly at me and I tensed up hearing that I will be sharing the same room with Zachary.

“Oh no!” I thought.

My throat felt dry and I began to fidget with my fingers.

“Anxiety! Anxiety! Anxiety” my brain screamed at me.

“Unn Excuse me?” I said with a trembling voice which got their attention. All of them looked at me with questioning eyes because of my trembling voice.

“Can I.. Can I..” my voice trembled even more.

“Dear are you alright?” Zachary’s mom looked worried.

I felt Zachary tightening his grip around me probably warning me not to do anything stupid.

Anxiety was building up inside me. I felt the bile rising. Sweats formed on my palms. My legs wobbled. And to ease that the only thing I wanted from the starting when I came here was “Can I get an Ice cream? Please?” I asked with shaky voice while all the three of them looked at me with a baffled expression.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 13

Juliette Pov

“Do you like it?” Mrs. Julia asked me while I licked the Vanilla ice cream from my spoon.

“Yes ma’am Thank you,” I said and took another spoon of ice cream into my mouth.

“Ma’am?” she asked puzzled and laughed “oh dear!”

“Call me mom. I’m like your mother” she said in a soothing voice that almost made me cry. I missed my mom so badly. I wished to hear her voice for at least once.

Nevertheless, I smiled at the kind woman at me and said in a low voice as it felt strange for me to call another woman as a mom “Thank you, mom”.

She chuckled and held my left hand into her warm ones “Why is your hand so cold?” she asked looking worried.

I stayed quiet biting my tongue and stared at the cup of ice cream before me.

“Should I tell her that her son is the reason of my condition?” I wondered.

“Oh I get it!” suddenly she said in a high tone as if it strike her. I looked at her in confusion.

“You are nervous, right? Because you are meeting your in-laws for the first time” she said and looked as if she solved the hardest puzzle by herself.

“I think I should not,” I thought

I gave her a small smile and merely nodded my head.

“Oh don’t be nervous my dear. I do accept that I was little mad beforehand for Zachary not telling me anything about you and let alone getting married but the moment I saw you there standing with my son looking at him so lovingly all my thoughts and doubts went out of the window” she said making me cringe inwardly.

“Lovingly?” I thought.

“I always wanted a woman who would take care of my son and would love him. I wanted a woman who would give him love which we couldn’t give him when he was young” she paused for a moment making me confused.

“What does she mean?” I wondered.

“Oh,” she exhaled a breath.

“Please ease my heart by promising me that you would take care of my son” suddenly she said making my heart beat vigorously against my chest.

“Please promise me no matter what you will always love him and have trust upon him” she urged and looked at me with pleading eyes.

“Love? Care? Trust?” I thought.

“What am I supposed to do now? Where is that Zachary when he is needed?” I thought.

“I-I” I began to stutter.

“I promise,” I said and in the moment I hated Zachary even more for making me do so.

“Thank you dear” she exhaled a breath and left my hand keeping it on her forehead.

“I am so glad that he found a woman like you” I heard her whisper and my heart clenched “See what you are making me do and look how you are giving fake hopes to your own mother Zachary,” I thought.

I took the spoon and scooped up a spoonful of cold ice cream which was now beginning to melt and put it inside my mouth.

“I have found a weakness of yours” suddenly she said and I turned towards her to find her looking smugly at me.

“You eat ice cream when you are filled with anxiety or when you are nervous right?” she said and I sighed in relief.

“Yes, mom” I smiled nodding at her and she smiled back at me “Just like I like to eat pizza” she whispered but I heard it.

“I guess I found your weakness too,” I said and she looked at me startled and the next moment we both burst out laughing.

“I see you two are getting along very well” I heard Zachary’s voice and I turned towards the entrance of the dining room to find him walking towards us.

“Oh very well,” mom told him beaming with happiness.

“It’s good,” said Zachary’s father as he too walked inside after him.

“So c’mon let me show you two your new room,” she said and that is when I began to wish that somehow the chair on which I was sitting super glue to me so that I remain sitting on it for the rest of my life. As insane it sounds I would rather stick to the chair than sharing a room with Zachary.

“C’mon” mom took hold of my hand and pulled me up from the chair. Like a fool, I glared at the chair for not accepting my wish.

She walked towards the door with me following behind her as I had no choice because she was still holding my hand literally dragging me. She seemed more excited to give us our room.

We walked out of the dining room and then walked past a hall. I kept on glancing at everything while we passed. Everything seemed so expensive and classy.

“We are here,” she said as we stood before a door.

“Oh, here it goes,” I thought.

We walked into the room only to find it decorated for a newly wedded couple. The rose petals that were on the bed, the flower curtains and the flower vines made me want to die.

But apart from all this, the room was very big. The walls were painted white and had woody painting frames hanged on it. The bed even had a canopy and it was covered with a net curtain. Everything in the room was either white or gray.

If it was some another day with other situation then I was sure that I would have jumped up and down clapping my hands feeling excited but today everything was different. Contrasting to it I was feeling gross out.

“Do you like it?” Mom asked and I gave her a nervous smile.

“What is this mom?” Zachary asked looking baffled as his eyes roamed around the room.

“What is what?” she asked looking confused.

“This! This all decoration” he asked as he pushed me and walked inside the room not even bothering to show some courtesy to me.

“I know isn’t it amazing? I decorated it myself” she beamed showing her perfectly sized white teeth.

“But Mo-” Zachary was cut off “Okay now you two rest. You must be very tired. Take a nap and later on you can go out for shopping for the reception party or maybe it will be more appropriate if I call a designer to the house. Rest well” she said and left closing the door after her but not before winking at me.

“Weird! Mine suppose to be mother-in-law winked at me” I thought staring at the closed door like a goof.

I gulped down the lump that formed in my throat and turned around to find Zachary standing on his spot with his back facing me muttering something to himself while he shook his head occasionally.

He walked straight which I guessed was the bathroom leaving me standing not even uttering a word for which I was genuinely thankful. I didn’t want any conversation between us because I don’t want to get close to a man who killed my lover.

I didn’t forget what he did to Emmett.

I closed my eyes imagining his smile. I loved his smile. Whenever I saw him smiling I would always smile back. It was like a reflex. My lips twitched up every time I saw him smiling. He is so charming.

"I should say he was charming" I corrected feeling guilty that I couldn't do anything.

I am the worst lover one could ever have.

I went towards the bed and sat on the edge and got rid of my shoes. I was so tired that I didn't even think about changing my clothes. I turned towards the side and closed my eyes when I heard the shower running.

A few minutes later I felt the bed dip beside me. My eyes snapped open and I sat up in a jerk which made me feel little dizzy.

I saw him sitting on his side with his back facing me. He was now in a black Tee and a loose pant. He was raking his finger through his wet hair probably unaware of the fact that I was now sitting on my side staring at his back.

I got up from the bed and took the pillow and went towards the couch. I wouldn't ever share a bed with a criminal. He was a criminal after all and I hated him with all my guts.

I threw the pillow on the couch and made myself comfortable on it. I turned the other side where I couldn't see his face and hugged myself closing my eyes drifting off to sleep.

An annoying sound disturbed my sleep which made me groan in irritation.

I clicked my tongue in irritation.

I hoped the source to fade away but when it didn't my eyes fluttered open and I looked around to find the room's light off. The television was on and the light from the screen flashed on my eyes as the plasma Tv hung just in front of my couch on the wall.

It was the sound of the TV which was irritating me.

"Will you please reduce the sound?" I asked politely to him hoping that he would reduce it and let me sleep.

Surprisingly, the sound decreased and I sighed in relief. But it was only for a second because the next moment he increased the sound even more.

"Ugh! What the heck?" I groaned as I sat up on the couch glaring at him.

He sat leaning against the headboard with his legs crossed over each other. His one hand was above his head while another was on the Tv remote.

"I am trying to sleep. What are you doing?" I asked irritated.

He chose to ignore me and he flipped through the channels not even bothering about my discomfort.

“Are you listening to me?” I asked and bit down on my lips annoyed.

I lied back on the couch and to my extreme annoyance, he chose to annoy me even further by increasing the volume to the level where my ears began to hurt.

“Ugh!” I took the pillow and slapped it on my ear trying to shield the voice to get into my ears.

“Why?” I cried as I sat on the couch cupping my ears.

As if it wasn’t the end he increased the volume to the end. The room boomed with the television’s sound as I kept on shrieking in irritation. I wondered how nobody in the house didn’t get annoyed by the terrible irritating annoying voice.

I yelled in annoyance and ran towards the bathroom.

But I was quite sure that through the horrible sound of the TV I somehow managed to hear him saying in triumphant “Score one for Zachary.”

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 14

Juliette Pov

“So which one do you like?” Mrs. Julia asked as she looked at me waiting for my answer.

“All are very lovely. It’s difficult to choose” I said as I looked at the dresses that were hung on the hook for us to choose.

In the morning, she came to our room and told me that she is taking me for shopping for today’s reception. I agreed immediately because it was supposed to be going to be the only time where I could remain away from him. I so badly wanted to go away from him and this was a golden opportunity.

But him being him, he allotted bodyguards with us to accompany us. As much as I felt weird and uncomfortable with three bulky bodyguards following us, Mrs. Julia looked as if she isn’t new to all this.

“So?” she asked looking at the beautiful dresses that she wanted me to select for the reception party.

“Umm,” I looked through them and shrugged.

It was difficult for me because usually Kiara or mom always selected my dresses for any special occasion because they knew what to wear and what would exactly make me look much better than I already look. According to them, I don’t have any sense in choosing a perfect dress.

“Aww it’s alright sweetie,” Mrs. Julia said and I looked back at her questionably.

“Do you mind if I select a dress for you?” she asked all of a sudden which made me sighing in relief.

“Thank God” I murmured and nodded my head Yes. She smiled at me before going through the dresses searching a perfect one for me.

“Tell me what length of the dress it should be?” she asked not even glancing my way.

“Umm, full length,” I told her and she nodded and kept on going through the expensive fabrics trying to search for a perfect one. I was sure that by now she must have formed an imagination in her mind how the dress should look like because the way she was searching for the dress tossing away which she didn’t like gave the impression.

“Found it,” she said and took out a classy peach colored maxi dress with v neck in the front and backless dress. The dress flowed down from the waist and it was simple but elegant.

“It’s lovely,” I said and she handed me the dress.

“C’mon now, try it. I want to see” she said and looked around probably searching for the change room.

“There it is. Go” she said pointing her finger towards the north side of the shop and I obliged doing what she asked for me to do.

I went inside the changing room and took my clothes off before changing into the dress. I looked at myself in the mirror only to be awed by what I looked.

“Wow,” I muttered.

The dress fitted perfectly on me and the color of the dress complimented my skin complexion. I turned around and found that some string were designed perfectly to make the dress look even more sophisticated. Even if the dress was backless I didn’t really mind if it wasn’t for those strings that crisscrossed each other on my back.

I walked out of the room and Mrs. Julia gasped at my sight.

“So lovely,” she said and I saw as her eyes twinkled with happiness.

“This dress is made for you,” the saleswoman said which made me smile.

“Absolutely,” Mrs. Julia said clasping her hand together.

“We are taking it. Right dear?” she asked me for confirmation and I nodded.

After we took the dress we went towards the shoe section where I chose lovely sandals and then after spending some more time in the mall we came back home.

“Home” I whispered to myself. I don’t really like calling it home. It makes me feel like I’m bound to call it home.

“Honey are you alright?” Mrs. Julia asked when we were walking back inside the house.

“Yeah,” I said giving her a small smile.

“What is it? You look pale? Are you not alright?” she asked with concern.

I nodded and assured her that I was alright although I was feeling a mild headache, I told her that I was alright.

“Okay. You sure?” she asked again and I nodded “Yes ma’am”.

“Oh no! I already told you. You can call me mom” she said.

I smiled at her and said, “Sorry.. mom”.

“That’s better,” she told me and we walked inside the house and took our bags towards our own room.

On reaching my room, the first thing I did was to run towards the bathroom. I threw up inside the comord and sat near it feeling terrible.

“What the hell?” I muttered and threw up once more emptying my stomach. I felt my rapid pulse and closed my eyes feeling dizzy.

“Oh God”

I flushed it and after brushing my teeth and washing my face properly, I walked back inside the bedroom not really feeling good. I fell on the bed and restless tossed around, feeling light-headed. My pulse was still rapid. So I closed my eyes only for a minute but soon I drifted off to sleep. It was as if my body was shutting down on its own. I had no strength left in me.

“Get up” I heard a voice and groggily opened my eyes to find Zachary staring down at me.

“What are you doing sleeping this long? Get up and get ready. It’s already six in the evening” he said and walked towards the walk in closet, probably to get ready.

As much I didn’t want to get up, I had to for his family. I couldn’t embarrass his family before their guests. I sat up with utmost difficulty and felt the world rotating before my eyes. I had to hold my forehead because of a headache I felt. After a moment when I was feeling good, I got down from the bed. The floor was cold as compared to my skin. I took the bag and went inside the bathroom.

I had to clean myself up first.

“I am going out. You come after you are ready” I heard him from the outside of the bathroom and then heard as the door of the bedroom shut close.

I sighed as I looked at myself in the mirror. My skin looked pale and there was sleep mark on my face probably because of me sleeping in an odd position. Filling the tub with cold water, I got out of my clothes and got inside the tub. It was soothing me. I sighed in contentment.

After I was done, I got out of the tub and dried myself using the towel. I wore my bra and panties and got into the dress that mom bought me earlier. I did my hair into a side bun because I had no strength left inside me to do a professional hairstyle. After I was done I did my makeup. I was doing everything opposite to what I usually do. It was as if my brain was not working. I just wanted to get it done. That’s it. It didn’t really matter how I did it.

I used mascara, liner, and light pink lipstick. Putting my earrings and other accessories, I was done. The time, I was wearing my sandals I felt my head spinning again and I had to get hold of the doorknob tightly from preventing myself from falling down.

“Shish!”

After I was stable I walked down the stairs and towards the front, where I could hear people chatting, music. The party must have started. As soon I reached the door, the door flung open.

“Oh, there you are. I was just going towards your room for you” mom said and eyed me up and down smiling.

“Oh you look so beautiful,” she said and smiled which made me smile too.

“C’mon let’s go. Everyone is waiting to get a glimpse of the bride” she said and though the only thing I wanted was to hop inside a car and drive away far where nobody could ever find me. I resisted the urge and nevertheless followed her towards where the party was held.

“Honey” she waved at her husband who walked towards us.

“You look amazing dear,” dad said which made me smile and I said a quiet ‘Thank You’ looking down at my feet. It’s not as if I was blushing or something but because I was feeling dizzy once again.

“Where is Zachary?” Mom asked dad and he shrugged in response.

“You are asking me? As if he tell me everything about what he does and what he doesn’-” he was cut off by mom herself.

“Honey! Will you please stop? It’s not the right place or time” she whispered yelled at him and he nodded adjusting his red tie.

“There he is,” mom said and we looked towards where she was looking.

We watched as Zachary talked to a group of man who didn’t really look like decent people. Because of the aura that they had, and the way their body was built it looked as if they were some wrestlers or something.

“Who are they?” I couldn’t help but ask.

“Probably his business associates,” Mom said and I looked at her as if she had two head.

“Was she serious? Even a three-year-old kids could tell that were not some ordinary business people but mobsters or criminals. Was she really that naive or maybe she was doing it on purpose. Then that means she really does have an idea about her son business. Mafia business” I thought.

A chill ran down my body when all of them turned towards me. Zachary pointed a finger towards me as if he was talking about me and the boys nodded in unison.

“What is going on?” I wondered.

“Is he commanding them to find me when no one is around me and kill me?” I thought and instantly felt as the blood flowed down from my face.

The boys looked at me one more time before walking towards the exit. Probably their work was done and they were leaving.

“Let’s make the announcement,” dad said once Zachary walked towards us.

He took a glass and clinked it using a spoon. Mom held a mike before him and everyone turned towards us and the music stopped playing for everyone's eye were now fixed on us.

"Ladies and gentlemen, so the time has come for which you have been waiting for so long. The newly married couple. My son Zachary Udolf Sullivan and my daughter-in-law Mrs. Juliette Udolf Sullivan" he said and cheered his glass towards our direction.

Zachary wrapped an arm around me and I put on a fake smile when people began to clap and congratulate us.

Photos were clicked and I had to smile at each and every photo to the point where my cheeks started to hurt.

"Mr. Sullivan can we ask what was the reason for the sudden marriage?" a reporter from the crowd asked.

Zachary tensed up from my side and I saw as he looked towards dad and glared at him.

"What are the reporters doing here?" he asked through gritted teeth. Dad just shrugged his shoulder while mom shook her head at them.

"That's because we had a long distance relationship and at some point, Juliette thought that our relationship wouldn't last so I had to take the decision. While I went to New York for this meeting, I made up my mind to bring her back to my home forever and hence the wedding" Zachary answered his question which made me clench my fists in anger.

"Liar!" I yelled at him in my mind.

"But it still doesn't make sense Mr. Sullivan. Why would you marry in such a hurry and in just a simple wedding when we all know that you are the most or should I say you 'were' the most eligible bachelor in Romania who became a Billionaire Businessman on his own? You could have married in a grand wedding celebration and how come we never heard of your girlfriend? As far as we know you were always single and you were rarely seen with the opposite gender. So how come?" Another one asked.

"Zachary never had a girlfriend?" I thought surprised after knowing this.

"And he is a Businessman who became a Billionaire by his own? Are you kidding me? What nonsense?" I thought.

"Well, that's because I like to keep my business and personal affairs to myself. And for the wedding, it was Juliette's idea. She wanted a simple wedding which we did" he answered and I looked here and there not knowing what to do.

"What about you ma'am? What do-" the reporter was cut off by Zachary.

"That's enough. As you all know we are having our wedding reception in here not some press conference so please allow us to enjoy the day. I would appreciate if you all join us for dinner.

That would be great" Zachary said which made some of the reporters groaning but some looked pleased because they could have dinner.

"Okay. Sir please One last photo together" one of them asked and Zachary nodded reluctantly.

"Please hold her more close to you," he said and I felt his arm wrapping around my waist more tightly before he pulled me closer towards him. From my peripheral vision, I could see Mom smiling at us and looking at us dreamingly.

"Lovely photo," the reporter's cameraman said as he was done.

Zachary let me go and we walked towards other guests to meet them. The more time passed the more nauseous I was growing to feel.

"What are you doing?" I heard Zachary when I was holding my forehead.

"I am not feeling fell. My head is spinning" I said closing my eyes.

"What?" He asked and the next moment I felt his cold hand touching my forehead.

"Your body is warm. You have a fever. What were you doing not telling me or at least mom about it?" He whispered yelled at me.

"Will you please quit yelling? I am not feeling well and I don't have enough energy left to fight back with you" I said and heard him sighing.

"You are done. We are going back inside the house" he said and reached out towards me when a man interfered with a British accent.

"Mr. Sullivan," he said which made Zachary put on a professional smile and both of them shook their hands.

"It's great to know that you are married now," he said and reached his hand out for me to shake. I gave him my hand and instead of shaking he took it to his mouth and placed a kiss on it.

"Pleasure to meet you, Mrs. Sullivan," he said and I gave him an odd smile before removing my hand.

"Uh, just a minute" Zachary interrupted him. He bent down towards mine ear and whispered "Just go back to the room. Take the medicine that is in the drawer next to the bed and sleep. I am coming in five minutes after I talk to him. And take the bed. Can you do it?" He asked and I nodded.

"Go now," he said and nodding at the Man I walked towards the house.

It was the only thing that I wanted to do right now. And that was to sleep.

The most surprising thing was out of all the people present in the party only Zachary was the one who noticed my pain. But the question is why was he so worried and how did he notice my uneasiness when I was trying so hard to act being perfectly fine?

Why?

Xxxx

Chapter 15

Zachary Pov

“Yeah that will be good” I said and he gave me his card.

“If you like the proposal, contact me in this number” Mr. Cameron said and went away to meet some other people.

I kept the card in my wallet and walked back towards my house.

Never had I imagined Juliette to be so careless. If she would have been stayed a little longer, definitely she would have passed out. Earlier, when my eyes fell on her shockingly I found myself praising the fact that indeed she looked beautiful in that dress of hers in the party. That colour looked good on her.

Then I jerked out my thoughts thinking what in the world was I doing praising her when she was nothing but a headache for me. But no matter how much I tried to avoid her my eyes would automatically try to search her among the people. But I did noticed her pale face and her closing her eyes in every minute as if she was trying to control her own body.

Finally when she closed her eyes and held her forehead I couldn’t resist the need to ask what her problem was. Then she answered she was not feeling well. Her temperature was undoubtedly very high that it even shocked me how in the world did she last that long without passing out.

I rubbed my forehead and took long strides to reach her. I just hoped her to take those medicines and asleep by now. I am not very good in assisting people when they are sick or consoling people when they cry.

Turning the knob, I opened the door only to come before a sight which somehow blew my consciousness away.

There in my bed slept two figures. One was undoubtedly Juliette, as she slept soundly with the quilt covering her up to her chin while next to her slept a man whom I was sure that I had no clue on who he was. The quilt covered upto his bare chest as he slept with one hand under his head and another on his chest.

I took a step back and closed the door silently. I rubbed my forehead in aggravation and took a long deep breath to control myself not to murder in my own house.

I opened the door again and walked towards them. Silently I threw the quilt off from the man which immediately made him jerk up from his sleeping position. He stood up before me and looked at me in shock.

“Its not what you are thinking. Seriously, we weren’t doing anything in your room” he said and turned around to leave but I stopped him by keeping a hand on his shoulder and immediately he tensed up under my touch.

I looked back at Juliette to see her stirring in her sleep but not wanting to wake her up, I took the quilt and covered her properly before gesturing the man silently walk out of the room and without uttering any word he walked out with me following him. I closed the door silently and turned towards the man.

“It was Juliette who called me here. I swear I didn’t want to do anything but your wife is a golddig-” he shut his mouth when he saw me pulling my gun out from my back.

“This is mine favorite revolver you know but do you know the saddest part?“I asked as I looked into his eyes which were now widened at the sight of my revolver.

“I haven’t got a chance to use it since I bought it but now” I smirked looking at him up and down “I think I will get a chance to inaugurate this. How ironic?” I said and pointed the gun directly on one of his eyes.

“But now I think I shouldn’t just kill you in one click. It will be no fun. The best part of killing is torturing, I would start it by shooting your black orbs first. Then may be your leg, so that you yelp and hop in one leg till I satisfy with your pain. Then your hand, then your other leg. Oh! it will be a sight to see you crawling on the dusty ground. Or maybe” I looked up thinking “in the water”.

“My bad! How will you swim when both of your legs are shot? You will drown. Oh my God. That means you will die? You are going to die?” I asked and chuckled seeing his pale face. Then I pointed the gun directly on his forehead.

“Or maybe I should just give you an easy death with no suffering” I said and pulled the slide back of the revolver.

“Wait! What are you doing? You can’t kill me. You are not suppose to kill a-anyone” he stuttered looking frightened.

“Don’t worry I don’t care about killing people. I am mad now. I am mad because not only you got into my place, you had the audacity to lie on my face and even had the nerve to lie to me looking straight into my eyes. At one point I would have even considered to let you go but do you know what sin you did? You slept next to my wife on my bed and had the nerve to call her using filthy words. You have invited your own death” I said and pointed the gun on his direction.

“Wait! No please no. Okay! Okay! I agree that I made a mistake. I lied! I lied. Nothing happened between us. Your wife was sleeping when I came here and she had no clue about me when I sneaked up inside the bed. I was told to do all this. I am just an actor. I was going to be paid for

this. I don't have any enmity with your wife or you. Please don't kill me" he begged and literally he looked as if he was in the brink of passing out.

"I already know that. Do you think I'm stupid?" I smirked and rotated the revolver between my finger from its trigger guard.

"Who do you think I am?" I gave him a crooked smile and gestured behind him.

He looked confused but soon his expression turned into a shocked one when both Marc and Jeffery, took hold of him from behind.

"Take him. Where you know" I said and kept the revolver back.

"Wait! Take me where? I did nothing. Wait! Believe me. I was just doing my work. Please" he struggled against them while I rolled my eyes at him as if I cared.

Marc and Jeffery dragged him out of the house where they could take care of him.

"Well it was not needed, you know" I heard him from behind me and sighing I turned around.

"Well well! Look who is here. The culprit himself" I gritted out and walked out from the shadows and stood before me.

"Oh so you knew?" He asked looking surprised but I knew he wasn't.

"Of course! Who has the audacity to go that extent testing my patience? One and only Mr. Gale Sullivan" I said sarcastically and crossed my arms across my chest.

"Don't talk to me like that. I am your father" he said looking pissed.

"You are not my father. You are just my mother's husband and my father's twin brother who married my mother after his death. And you know what? You proved that you are not my father with this little stunt of yours today" I said and glared at him which made him look to the side.

"Did you really think you can win with all this cheap acts of yours?" I spat out.

"And do you really believe that I would believe that you married a woman just because you I mean 'you' fell in love? You are risking my whole mafia business just because of this stupid-" I cut him off.

"Its not your business but mine. It was my father's business which was temporarily handed over to you and now its mine. So don't ever forget that. And you don't need to think what is right and what's wrong. I knew that you would pull such a trick on me. You made a mistake by pulling Juliette into this Gale, and mind it that man whom you allotted for all this is going to pay with his life only because of you" I promised.

"I'm sure Juliette will not like this, if she gets to know what you did with that ma-" I cut him off "Don't involve Juliette into this. This is your last warning. If you weren't my mother's husband,

I would have killed you for sure for such an act and be happy that I'm not telling anything about what you did to mom. Its only because she loves you and I don't want to see her sad. But next time you pull such a stunt, I will erase every single strand of you from this world and that my promise not a warning to you" I said and with one last glance towards him with hatred I went back into my bedroom.

I went near to where Juliette was sleeping and checked her temperature. I removed the quilt from her to find her sleeping in that same dress and with her shoes on. Reluctantly, I pulled her sandal off her feet and tucked her back using the quilt.

Sighing, I went to the couch and sat on it looking towards her way.

"You are lucky that you have no idea about my family" I paused a bit and then continued "and also about your own family too."

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 16

Juliette Pov

I looked around at my surrounding. What I could only see was sand and only sand. I was sweating and the only thing which I wanted was to drink a glass no a gallon of water. I was that thirsty.

A moan escaped my mouth and groaning my eyes fluttered open. I tried to sit and leaned against the headboard. Last night events rushing into my mind. All I could remember was coming back into the room and taking medicines before passing out on the bed.

I looked towards the nightstand to find a glass filled with water. Feeling blessed, I took the glass and gulped down the water immediately getting relief from the burning sensation and thirst.

“Thank God,” I said and kept the glass back on the nightstand.

“Juliette?” I heard the door knock and mom poked her head asking me if she could come in.

“How are you feeling sweetie?” She asked as she sat next to me on the bed.

“I am feeling good now,” I told her and she kept her cold hand on my forehead checking my temperature.

“The temperature seems to be down,” she said and brushed the strands of hair out of my face.

“Juliette you should have told me that you were not feeling well. I would have never kept the party at the first place. You got sick probably because of lack of rest after your long travel from Egypt. It’s all my fault. I should have been careful” she said which made me shook my head no.

“No! It’s not your fault. It’s me actually. I was sick because of the climate probably. That’s all. You don’t need to blame yourself for such a small thing” I said and she gave me a weak smile before getting up.

“Zachary was really mad at me this morning,” she said which made me cough.

“Worried? Z-Zachary?” I asked with wide eye disbelieving what she just said.

“Yes, he was. Why are you giving me this disbelieving look? Zachary scolded me this morning for not noticing your behavior and when I said I did notice it, all hell broke loose on me” she sighed as she kept her hands on her waist.

“Why would he do that?” I thought.

“Anyways. My son can be scary at some times. If I don’t take care of you now then probably I will be deaf hearing all his tantrums. He reminds me so much of my mother” she shook her head probably remembering the time she spent with her mother.

“Today you are not going anywhere. I am in charge to take care of you. You are going to rest here the whole day. Allow your mother-in-law to take care of you today dear” she said which made me chuckle.

“Okay! Just sleep a little long before I bring you your food and medicines okay?” She asked as she tucked me back into the sheets.

“Okay!” I said and closed my eyes.

She reminded me so much of my own mother, but in a different way. She is more caring than my own mother. I thought before I fell back into sleep.

The next time I woke up, I had to eat all those boiled foods that she made, which was a torture for me being a picky eater. And I had to take all those tablets in order to get well soon. I went into the bathroom and changed into something more comfortable. I wore my pajamas and after washing my face and finishing up with bathroom business, I went back into the room and lied down on the bed.

It had been a whole day and surprisingly there was no sight of Zachary. I wonder what he was doing. Talking about Zachary, I recalled him saying ‘go back to the room and sleep. I will come in five minutes’.

“Liar!” I scoffed at him.

He doesn’t care about. I am hundred percent sure he never showed up and he was just pulling up an act of being concerned about me before mom, nothing else.

Why would he care about me? A person who can kill a groom before his bride on the wedding day can never be a kind-hearted, caring person. All he has filled up inside him is hatred, trouble, and rage for people.

I looked towards the clock to find its already fifteen minutes to six in the evening. My thoughts went back to the time when Emmett told me that he loved me when he proposed me and when he used to hold me in his arms affectionately when I was hurt or sick.

“You promised me that you would always be there for me when I’m alone or in pain Emmett. So where are you, Emmett? I’m sick and now I’m in a lot of pain. Please come and save me Emmett” I cried silently not able to hold back tears.

“I am in terrible condition and all I want is to see you. Please keep your promise, Emmett. Please!” I begged.

I cried for some minutes or maybe hours still trying to register the fact that he was no more. He was killed before me and now no matter how much I would try I could never reach him. Ever.

The thought that I could never see his face made me cry even more.

“I loved you heartily and I’m still in love with you. What do I do? What do I do?” I sobbed and closed my eyes.

“Please give me a hint on what to do. I’m in a lot of pain and I can’t bear it anymore” I sobbed and wiped the tears out of my face.

The door opened and I knew that it Zachary this time. Because earlier, mom gave me my medicines and went out and dad went out of the country. So the only person who is left would enter without knocking is Zachary. Mentally, I prepared myself for his tantrums. I got up and was ready to snap at him when I found my voice lost in my throat.

There in the entrance stood Zachary covered in blood. His shirt was stained with blood while blood oozed out from his mouth and he had some bruises and cuts on his face.

He glanced my way in a way that warned me not to open my mouth or he would kill me in just a snap of his finger. I closed my mouth shut afraid and looked the other way frightened not liking the view. It wasn’t what I was hoping to ever witness. I never like the sight of blood and looking at him made me nauseous and my condition and body didn’t even help me.

He took long strides and went directly into the bathroom. I looked towards the bathroom when I heard the door slamming shut. He was angry and somehow he holding himself back.

But what was the cause and who did this to him? What happened?

I got up from the bed and paced around the room. Though he didn’t show it but judging from the amount of blood and bruises I saw I knew he was in a lot of pain. I heard the shower running. My heart beat rose when I heard the sounds stop. He was done.

In no time, he got out of the bathroom all cleaned wearing just a towel. I turned around embarrassed and bit down on my lips thinking what to say or do. Somehow I felt nervous. I knew that he walked into the closet to change. So I took the pillow and sheets and went to the couch.

I took his bed for a night and judging by his state, it will not be good for him to sleep on the couch. I can’t let him sleep on the couch for the sake of humanity. I’m not that cold-hearted.

I sat on the couch and was ready to sleep when he came out of the closet.

“What are you doing?” He asked in a neutral tone which I could decipher if he was upset, happy or angry.

“I am sleeping here today,” I said and arranged the pillows.

“Get back into the bed,” he said and snatched the pillow from me.

“No it’s oka-” he cut me off, “I said get back into the bed,” he said in an intimidating tone which almost made me whimper like a child. Nevertheless, I got up and went to the bed. He threw the pillow on my lap and I kept it under my head before getting into a comfortable position.

I was still worried for him to sleep on the couch but all my concern for him went out of the window when he crawled next to me on the bed and covered himself using the duvet.

“W-What are you doing?” I asked but I got no reply.

I watched his back for few minutes thinking that he would get up at any minute and go back to the couch but nothing ever happened as I thought.

Reluctantly, I lied down and turned towards the other side. Mentally, I prepared myself for screaming and even for putting up a fight if he ever put a finger on me. I tensed when he flicked the lights off.

“God” I whispered to myself.

After remaining conscious for about an hour expecting any kind of act from him, I took a sigh of relief. Probably, he was not that kind of guy. But how Ironic, I find the Zachary sleeping next to me and the one who killed my fiance in my wedding looks so different.

Back then, only the way he spoke in that church before shooting made me whimper and scared shitless but the Zachary I’m dealing with today although is not different from that one but still he doesn’t make me hunching down in fear.

As if both of them are a different person with the same personality. Thinking of it I still don’t have any clue upon why Zachary killed Emmett and why he married me when he could have just killed me. What did Emmett do to him for all this enmity?

“Emmett, what were you hiding from me?” I whispered before I slipped into a deep slumber with the medicines reacting in my body.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 17

Zachary Pov

The vibrating of my phone in my pocket woke me up from my light sleep. I sat straight from my leaning position and took the phone out of my jacket.

The clock read half past three in the morning. I looked towards Juliette to find her sleeping still in her position. I picked the phone seeing the caller ID that it was Max.

“What is it?” I said and rubbed my eyes trying to get rid of drowsiness.

“Boss! I have a bad news” he said and immediately he gained my whole attention only in that one sentence.

“And it is?” I asked

“The person whom we held captive has been killed,” he said which made me stand in disbelieve.

“What?” I snapped.

Juliette groaned and stirred in her sleep. Silently, I walked towards the bathroom and closed the door behind me.

“What did you say?” I asked through gritted teeth.

“You mean to say under all those securities someone managed to sneak in and kill hi- what was his name? Yeah! Freddy if I’m correct! Someone sneaked in and killed the only person who could have given us information?” I raked a hair through my hair and slammed my hand on the wall.

“But I also have good news,” he said and leaned my head close to the wall feeling frustrated.

“It better be good or prepare yourself yo die” I spat.

“Boss Freddy got killed but we couldn’t let the person who killed him escape out of our territory. He is in our captivity” he said and somehow I felt relief.

“And you won’t believe who has been caught,” he said with excitement evident in his tone.

“Willi Simmel,” he said and an evil smile slowing made up on my face hearing that.

“Say that again!” I said wanting to confirm it that what I heard was true.

“Willi Simmel is under our captivity boss!” He said and I laughed a victorious laugh.

“Bring that bastard to me. We have a lot to catch up with” I said and heard him chuckling.

“Already in our way boss. We will be reaching there by one” he said and we hung up.

I looked at myself in the mirror. The images of what happened three years ago came back flooding into my mind. I closed my eyes and clenched my jaws in anger.

"You better prepare yourself, Willi," I said and nodded mentally preparing the ways to greet him.

I went back into the room and gathered all my things up including my revolver. I took my jacket and glanced towards Juliette's sleeping form.

It's been nine hours since I have been waiting patiently for them to reach here. Nine torturing hours, to be precise. I have been craving to kill and all I could do is only to torture all those previous punks who were captivated by us.

"They are here," Jeffery told me which got me immediately on my feet. I took desperate long strides to get to the basement where they were. It was the urgency to see that bastard kneeling before me begging for forgiveness. It was the urgency to see fear in his black orbs for me that got me walking faster towards the basement.

"Boss" Max bowed his head when he saw me.

"Well well look who do we have here," I said chuckling seeing his bloodied body tied up on a chair.

He glanced up at me and spat on me.

"It looks like Max didn't greet you well," I said as I got rid of the jacket on which he spat.

"Disgusting punk!" Max yelled and kicked Willi right on his chest which made him lose his balance and he tumbled backward with the chair causing him to whimper in pain.

"Oh! that sound. It's like music to my ears" I said and signaled Marc.

Marc nodded and came forward and kicked Willi right on his face which made him even more whining and groaning in pain.

Jeffery made Willi back from his sitting position and intentionally stood on his foot which seemed as if was shot.

Willi screamed in agony thrashing with the chair wanting to be set free. I laughed at his expressions. It was what I was waiting very patiently to see from three years.

Three bloody years after I have finally got him where I wanted him after what he did

"Oops! Forgive me. It looks like I've trodden on his foot which was shot by Max. I'm sorry. I swear it was-" Jeffery paused before he stomped again on that already bloodied feet which made Willi scream as if his life was being pulled out of his body "an accident" he finished with a smirk.

“I forgot to ask. How are you, Willi?” I asked as if we were best friends meeting after a long time.

“You seem extremely fine to my eyes though” I chuckled seeing him trying to stop himself from screaming anymore.

“Huh!” he coughed and shook his head smirking at me.

“You think yourself a man?” he snapped which made me raise an eyebrow.

“Untie me and I will show you your position” he rolled his shoulder back and shook his head.

“Shut u-” Max intervened but was cut off by me.

“Untie this punk” I commanded.

“But Boss-”

“Untie him,” I said and reluctantly Max nodded and untied him from the chair.

“Now what were you saying?” I said as I rolled my sleeves up and watched as he ripped his blood stained shirt away from his muscular body displaying the wolf tattoo on his half of his ribcage.

He rolled his shoulder and shook his head.

Without replying he lunged forward towards me. He attacked with a big right overhand punch which was directed towards my chin but I managed to dodge it on time and flew a punch right on his rib cage.

He stumbled backward but gain his balance and lunged again towards me and drove his shoulder into my side pushing me backward which made me stumble this time only to be saved by the chair.

Jeffery came forward and took the chair out of the range.

“Everyone back!” I snapped.

Everyone took few steps back giving me and Willi enough space to fight. Willi had managed to wake my rage for him that has been building inside me since I saw him killing my own sister before my eyes.

“I’m going to kill you” I snarled and kicked him on his chest and swiftly drove my shoulder into his chest pushing him backward and slammed him against the wall where I landed one by one swift and solid punches on his guts.

His face had an expression as if he was being burnt alive. But it didn’t stop me because the screaming of my sister and how the soul was ripped out of her body before my own eyes came like a Tsunami into my consciousness that it made me wild, raging like a wild animal, thirsty for blood, craving to hunt.

I clawed his throat and strangled compressing his neck trying to block the air.

He clawed my hand and tried to remove it from his neck.

“L-Let g-go” he coughed.

“Isn’t it what Avery once asked you, precisely begged you?” I clenched harder which made him thrashing against my hold.

A tear rolled down my cheek recalling how her eyes begged me to save her but I couldn’t because I was tied down few feet away from her but I was thrashing around in urgency to set myself free so that I could reach her. I strangled his neck to a position where his veins popped out from his cheek and forehead and his skin turned red with his eyes popping out and tear started squirting out of his eyes.

A hard punch to my stomach made me release him and he fell on his knees before me coughing and gasping for air.

“Funny right? Have you ever imagined that there will come a day where you will in the same position where my sister was?” I asked and kicked in his guts.

He slammed against the wall groaning but stood up in swiftly blocking my kick with a hand.

Using an elbow strike he struck me hard on my face which made me stumble backward. I could feel a cut on my face with blood oozing out.

“Look at you crying like a baby” he teased me and smirked at me.

“I am amused to see you like this when you yourself know that you are on the brink of dying. I must say you are utterly brave to put on an expression like that before me” I said which made him chuckle.

“Believe me pal, my profession taught me that,” he said and blew a punch towards me.

I didn’t even get time to register what he was going to do and the very next second I felt solid punches on my face.

It took me a second to regain my position and I punched back before bringing my hands up to defend myself. He lunged, swinging but missing. But I didn’t miss when I punched directly on his guts which made him cough out blood. He knelt down on his knees and coughed blood.

He looked in no position to stand up. I gestured my men to do their work and they did. They got hold of him and made him sit back on the chair.

“How could you not feel mercy killing a pregnant woman before her own family, before her own brother?” I cried remembering the day how brutally he killed my pregnant sister.

“I was just doing my work” he coughed.

“But she was pregnant!” I yelled and kicked him right in his face.

“You are not supposed to hit a woman especially a pregnant woman” I yelled and fisted my hair in frustration.

“I too have a family. Whatever I did wasn’t personal” he said and groaned in pain.

“But it is bloody personal to me” I snapped.

“You bastard deserve to die. You deserve to rot in hell because of you I couldn’t sleep at night because of the nightmares of my sister screaming for help, which made me feel how worthless I was. Because of you not only did I lose my sister but also my only true friend that I ever had. And I have been dreading and waiting for the day when I could lay my hand on you. And now when I have got you. Trust me! You are going to die” I snarled as I slammed my hand next to him on the armrest making direct contact with his eyes.

“But don’t worry I won’t end your life that easily. I will make sure that each and every I torture you to the extent when you are going to beg me just to kill you” I promised.

“Killing your sister was the most-” he coughed “the worst thing I ever did” he took a long and deep breath before speaking “Trust! I too have nightmares about killing that innocent lady who was to bring a new life to this world. I despise myself for killing her. But I was forced to do that” he said and which made me laugh sarcastically.

“My wife was held captive and he threatened me that if I didn’t kill your sister, then he would finish my wife. I had no choice. Believe me!” tears trickled down his cheeks as he lowered his head.

“I already know that. Feel happy that you are still alive only because of that but it doesn’t mean that you are less sinful than Avery’s husband” on this, his head shot upwards towards my direction.

“Yes! I know. It was that Nicholas who hired you to kill my sister isn’t it?” I snarled and he nodded.

“Pitiful for a man. Not only did he kill his own wife but his own child. That disgusting piece of shit” I raked a hand through my hair and rubbed my face.

“Three years. It took me three years to trace his bloody ass down. I thought finally I got my revenge and killed him with my own hands stripping his true love right before his own eyes but I was wrong” I looked at my hands.

“That bastard didn’t die and-”

“You are wrong” Willi intervened panting harder.

“What?”

“You are wrong. That man never loved anyone in his life. The only thing he loved is only money and power. He was going to repeat the same thing which he did with your sister” he said which made me clench my fist in anger. My blood boiled hearing that.

“And before he could use me for the same thing again. I got myself caught where I wanted” he said with a sly smile which made me raise an eyebrow.

“What?” I asked.

“You heard it right. I’m going to help you get your revenge. I’m with you” he said which made me laugh. A good hysterical laugh.

“Who do you think I am? Do you find me stupid to believe this shit?” I asked crossing my hand over my chest.

“And do you think that anybody could capture me that easily?” He looked towards Max and Max looked at me confused.

“The truth is he didn’t capture me and no one ever could. I let myself captured by him. It was mine plan from the beginning to reach you. And the only way to reach you was to let myself captured by that sorry ass of that punk” he said smirking at Max.

“Why yo-” Max took a step enraged only to be held back by Marc.

“Look I am the only one who can help you to reach Nicholas. Trust me!” He said and I gave out a laugh.

“Trust you? and why is that?” I asked.

“Because I too want revenge,” he said which made me raise an eyebrow.

“Because he killed my wife” he finished.

I knew I was in no condition to return home. My shirt was completely stained with blood and my face had cuts and bruises. Walking like that into my house was risky because then mom would see me in that condition and she would soon find out the reason.

So I sneaked in. But never had I ever imagined to face Juliette in that condition. As soon as she saw me her face held that frightened expression. I was mentally hoping her to be in a deep sleep for she was still unwell.

She went to sleep on the couch. For her not in a condition to lie down on such an uncomfortable couch would have been torturous. So I made her sleep on the bed while I took the other side of the bed. It was my bed after all.

I wasn’t in a position either to sleep on that uncomfortable couch. Ignoring her, I switched the lights off and slept.

But it was being hard for me to sleep when the only thoughts were buzzing in my mind on how to get my hands on him. On that bastard Nicholas Greer.

Xxxx

Chapter 18

Juliette Pov

“I want to talk to my parents,” I said gathering up all my courage. I put all my emotions into my eyes hoping that he would give up and at least let me talk to my parents.

My shoulder sagged in defeat when I looked at myself in the mirror. I have been practicing for an hour about how to ask Zachary to allow me to talk to my parents again.

It’s been a week since I have been here, all alone in this big house roaming inside the house like a spirit. Mom and dad have left to some island to meet Zachary’s grandfather. Zachary merely showed himself before me. The glimpse I get of him is when I wake up, he leaves and when I sleep he comes and sleeps on his side of the bed.

He glanced up at me and ignored me.

“Can’t you hear me?” I asked.

“No I can’t” he replied.

“Wow!”

“I want to talk to my parents,” I said and stood before him blocking his view from the TV.

“Move out of the way” he scoffed and glared and glared at me.

“Not until you give me your phone,” I said adamantly.

“I am telling you for the last time. Move out of the way” he said slowly enunciating each word but I rolled my eye.

“Give me your phone,” I said and crossed my arms across my chest.

The next moment he took sat up from his lying position and opened the drawer of the nightstand. For a moment, I thought I won and he was now going to give me his phone but then my hopes were crashed down or should I say shot down when he took his gun out from the drawer and kept it before him.

“What are you doing?” I asked frightened.

“I warned yo-”

“Do you thing I am afraid of you?” I asked as I took few steps backward.

His eyes were fixed on my moves.

“I am not s-scared,” I said stubbornly but could feel my knees shaking with terror before my commencement speech, but I put on a brave front and stepped out onto the stage to deliver it.

“I want to talk to my parents. Just give me your phone” and tried to put on a brave front.

“You are annoying m-” he held his gun but I cut him off.

“Fine! Don’t give me your gun... Uh, I mean your phone. Now I won’t take your phone even if you give that to me by yourself” I said and exited the room. Practically ran out of the room.

Outside the room, I released out air and wiped the sweat away from my forehead.

“You are annoying me” I mimicked his voice.

“What does he think of himself? Loser!” I said and scoffed at him.

“So violent” I sighed and shook my head.

“But I won’t give up,” I thought and wandered around thinking about the ways to get his phone or some source where I could contact my parents.

An idea formed in my mind and a crooked smile immediately formed on my lips. I went into the room only to find him sleeping.

“Perfect,” I thought.

I saw his phone lying on the bed next to him. The only thing I need to do was to silently sneak up next to him and pick up that box of a phone and go out and call dad.

“So simple” I scoffed at the thought.

“Okay that was a bad idea” I muttered as I tried to wiggle my hands out of his grip.

“Do you want to die?” he said through gritted teeth.

“Let me go,” I said as I tried to wiggle my hands out from him but failing miserably.

Technically it was a bad idea. Very bad idea. But I found out a new thing. He is a light sleeper. When I tried to sneak up next to him and I was only mere inches away from the phone he got up and held both of my hands in his glaring at me.

“Let go,” I said and pulled my hands.

“Well, it was you in the first place who thought sneaking up while I’m sleeping and taking my phone is a good idea. So what happened now?” he asked and held my hands more tightly.

“Ow! You are hurting me” I cried and was astonished when he let go of my hands immediately.

“Just go away,” he said and took the phone and slid it into his pant pockets. I rubbed my hands where it hurts and without knowing I felt my cheeks getting wet.

“Now what?” He muttered.

“It’s been so long since I have talked to my parents. Especially dad. I don’t even know why my only best friend acted as if I was a stranger and she didn’t know me. Do you even know what

I'm feeling? I have been lonely wandering around in this big house alone. You don't even allow me out of the house. What am I? Rapunzel??" I cried and wiped my tears using my sleeves.

"Except I don't have long hair like that" I muttered to myself.

"It would have been hard to maintain such long hair. I mean you have to trim it, shampoo it, conditioner it and what not. Gosh! I can't even think of the amount of hairfal-" I stopped in the middle when I saw him giving me an incredulous look.

"What?" I asked.

"I think you need a psychiatrist," he said which made me wonder "But why?"

"What are we doing here?" I asked irritated.

"You only told me that you were 'lonely' and 'alone' and you wanted to go out of the house" he air quoted the words lonely and alone.

"But I didn't mean by going to a furniture shop," I said looking around to see people walking around, chattering and window shopping.

"What can I possibly do here?" I asked looking around.

He shrugged and stuffed his hands into his pocket.

"Choose some furniture for the new house," he said and looked to the other side.

"New house?" I asked surprised.

"We need furniture for our new house. Go and select whatever you want" he said and took his phone out.

"But why are you getting a new house, I mean isn't that your house?" I asked confused.

"That's my parent's house. I can't stay there forever. Go and select whatever you want or like and stop asking questions go me. Do you understand?"

"Jeez! Bipolar much. What's wrong with him?" I thought.

"Don't try to do anything funny. My men are nearby. Do anything stupid and I will throw you in that house forever" he said and went away somewhere.

"What is your problem? C'mon! I can't understand anything you ever say or do" I whisper yelled at him and I knew he heard me because he looked over his shoulder towards my way and narrowed his eyes at me.

Nevertheless, I still didn't get why we.. he need a new house. We are I mean I am fine living with his parents. I looked around and saw a recliner. It was a black made with leather recliner chair which had a reclining back with an integral footrest.

I always wanted a recliner chair.

I recalled how I used to tell Emmett about all the furniture that I would buy once we get married and move to our own house.

I smiled a little remembering those days.

“Buna ziua Doamna,” said a saleswoman which I believed was the Romanian language. Clueless to what she said I just gave her a stoic expression and tilted my head towards a side.

“Cu ce vă pot ajuta?” she said again with a polite smile.

“Uh, I’m sorry I don’t understand what you are saying. English please?” I asked and she nodded understanding.

“Oh! I mean How may I help you Ma’am?” she asked and I looked at the recliner.

“What is it’s price?” I asked and she looked at the recliner and then used her tab.

“It’s 90,000 Romanian Leu,” she said and I bit down on my lips confused.

“Umm Twenty thousand and seven hundred and sixty US Dollar,” she said and I nodded.

“Oh! I see” I said.

I talked to her more about the recliner and finally, I booked the chair.

“I wanted to see some bookshelves for my house. Where can I?” I asked.

“It’s on the fourth floor,” she said and I looked around and back at her.

“You can take the lift. Take a left from there” she pointed her finger towards a direction and I nodded smiling at her.

“Thank You,” I said and went towards the direction.

I found the lift and went into it and clicked the button four. The glass lift made a sound. I could see the outside clearly because of the glass. Then it took me up to the fourth floor.

I walked out of the lift and looked back at the lift because the door slid open and then closed again. It slid open again and closed once more before moving downwards.

I shrugged at it and went into the shop.

There were many shelves with various designs and after looking around, I found the perfect desired one. It was modern and white with curvy edges.

“Please finalize this one,” I told the salesman and he nodded.

I walked out of the shop and went towards the lift. I waited for the lift and oddly it took ten minutes to reach the floor.

I walked into the lift and clicked on the ground floor. The door closed but stopped midway. Then it slid open again and when I tapped on the close button, it slid close.

Halfway down, the lift trembled which made me little scared and then it stopped.

“What?” I asked in shock.

I clicked on the buttons and then punched at it forcibly.

“What the hell?” I screamed.

The lift stopped on the midway and through the glass door, I could only see the half of the floor. I crunched down on my knee and looked through the glass door.

“Hello?” I screamed petrified.

I looked around and found myself stuck alone between the four walls of the lift except one wall was the glass door through which I could look outside.

“Get me out!” I screamed.

I felt anxiety growing inside of me and thoughts of I would always stay inside the small room filled my mind. There was no escape and instantly tears pooled my eyes for I was closed inside a room with no escape. I knew that no time soon I will be having a panic attack and a serious one. My mind began to fill with the ideas of uncertain death and I cried feeling devastated that I was going to die in such a position.

My breath came out in shorts and I began to huff out air. My vision began to blind and I knew that no sooner I was going to collapse.

I tried to hit on the glass door and even screamed more for help but saw no one.

When I thought that I was nearly just a second away from collapsing, I saw someone. Someone who looked petrified as I was and concerned. As my vision continued to blur, I saw the person through the glass door running towards where I was crunched down in the lift.

“Juliette” Zachary hit on the lift door looking concerned.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 19

Juliette Pov

“Juliette!” he hit on the glass door, while I lay on the floor suffering from a panic attack.

“Juliette! Juliette look at me! Look at me” he said and hit hard on the glass door. My eyes involuntarily followed his movement while I struggled, panting and huffing out air.

I saw the woman from before running towards us. I was stuck just above the ground floor so the bottom part of the lift already was only visible on the ground floor. They could see me only because I was laying on the floor. The glass door made it easy for them to see me.

“Open this damn door” Zachary yelled at the woman and she nodded fishing out a phone from her pocket and calling someone.

“Juliette! Look at me. Look at me” I heard Zachary. I could only see his face because I was only half way up from the floor.

“Calm down! Calm down. Take deep breaths” he said but I couldn’t control my already shorter breaths.

He seemed to notice it. So he said “Look here. Look at me! Breath in” he said and I tried to do what he was saying.

“Take a deep breath, Juliette. Deep breath” he said and he too did it showing me how to do it. I followed his actions and finally, I was able to take deep breaths.

“Exhale now,” he said and I did it.

We did it together for few minutes until my breath was normal again. But I was still sobbing. I was scared.

“Just look here. Just look at my eyes” he said and I gazed into his brown orbs.

What is this?

I couldn’t hear what he was saying to me anymore. His brown orbs were captivating me. It was like he was captivating my soul. I lost control on my brain, and the only thing I could see was his eyes. His voice was inaudible to me, the world seemed to fade before me.

What is this happening to me?

I never felt anything like this before.

The more I looked into his eyes, I felt myself getting mesmerized. I felt my skin burning. The only thing that I could see was the concern in his eyes which was for me. It was the first time since I’m with him I saw this in eyes.

Or was it always there? I was the one who couldn't see it.

Is it possible just to get hypnotized only by a pair of eyes?

Never have had I ever felt these strange emotions inflicting inside me. Involuntarily, my hands reached up to where he kept his hands on the glass door.

I felt the cold surface of the glass beneath my palm as I kept my palm against the door. I could feel my heart beat fluttering.

What wrong with me?

If it wasn't for me still lost in his orbs, I would never have noticed his pupils dilating. Every time I breathe out his pupils would dilate.

Was he concerned?

But why?

I felt the lift trembling, but I was lost. Juliette was lost. She was lost somewhere where it was becoming impossible for her to return back. I saw him moving with me. He crunched down with me and then the lift door slid open.

"Juliette! Juliette!" he said as he crunched down before me on his and held me by my head.

"You are fine now. It's okay. It's okay" I heard him and then my hands raised. I held his arms tightly thinking he would go away in any second leaving me alone.

Alone?

"Get up!" he said and tried to make me stand up on my feet.

"Juliette! Snap out of it! You are okay now. It's fine" he said when I didn't move.

He sighed and the next moment he encircled his arms around me and scooted me up from the ground.

Why can't I look away from his face?

My gaze was fixed on his face, while he carried me back walking among those few people who gathered up near the elevator wanting to know what has happened.

He looked straight towards the way out but I was worried thinking about what I was truly feeling.

He put me down on the hard floor, but before I could fall or lose my balance he encircled his arms around my waist and shook his head at me.

He made me get inside the car and he himself put seat belts on me all the while not even looking at me. The more he avoided my gaze the more I felt uncomfortable and uneasiness.

But why?

“Drink this,” he said handing me something but I was lost. I was still lost.

“Juliette!” he said in a low voice and then clicked his tongue. I felt something touching my lips and I opened my mouth feeling the cold liquor inside my mouth. The cold water soothed my burning throat and finally, I felt my nerves calming down and I felt fresh and relieved.

“Hold it!” He handed me the bottle and closed the door shut.

He came back and sat on the other side and asked the driver to drive.

“Are you okay now?” He asked but I blinked my eyes few times in response.

“What’s wrong with you? Why are you so quiet? Did you hit your head?” he said and crossed his leg over another looking my way.

When I didn’t reply he took the water bottle from my hand and gulped down the water.

“I leave you just for some minutes and you get into trouble. What am I goin-” he paused and looked my way.

“Will you stop staring at me now?” he said seeming annoyed but he averted his gaze away from me as if he was embarrassed.

I snapped out of wherever I was and looked out of the window wide-eyed.

“What is this?” I thought.

“What is wrong with you Juliette?” I wondered.

The car stopped when the lights turned red. Without thinking, I got out of the car and shut the door hard.

“Oh my god!” I said and leaned against the door burrowing my face into my palm.

“What are you doing? Juliette!” I heard him from inside. But my heart raced up against my rib cage whenever I heard my name coming out from his mouth.

“Juliette!” He called again.

“Stop it! Stop it!” I said and slapped my cheeks few times feeling it burning.

I heard someone giggling and I looked towards my front to see two teenage girls giggling at me looking at me through the window of their school bus.

My skin flushed even more and before I could do anything I felt warm hands holding my cold arms.

“What do you think are you doing? Get in!” Zachary told me but he wasn’t glaring or scolding me like the other times he did to me. He told me in a quiet voice and gestured me to get inside the car. So, I did.

It even shocked me that I went inside the car by my own will. I didn’t argue or snap but I quietly got inside the car.

He stood outside of the car and looked befuddled. Then he came back to his side and got in all the while looking at me.

“Stop the car after you cross this road. I have an urgent phone call to make” he told the driver and the driver nodded.

Zachary looked back at me and opened his mouth to say something but closed it back and shook his head and the looked the other way.

The car came to a halt near the roadside and Zachary looked up my way before getting out of the car and closing it shut behind him.

I saw him dialing someone and he had a long conversation with that person before he stuffed his phone back into his pocket and ran his hand through his hair and got inside the car.

Then he said something out of nowhere.

“You want to talk to your father?” his question finally broke me out of my state.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 20

Juliette Pov

“What?” I asked shocked all of a sudden.

“Do you want to talk to your father, Yes or No?” he asked with a stoic expression.

“Oh my God! Of course!” I said gaping at him.

“Fine! I’ll let you talk to him. But not today” he said looking uncertain.

“What? But why?” I asked desperately wanting to talk to my parents.

“Just listen to what I tell you. Be happy that I’m letting you talk to him. When the time comes I will even let you meet him. But before that, there is something you need to know” his statement confused me.

“What do I need to know?” I asked in a low voice scared without any reason.

He glanced my way and sighed.

“There are many things to which you are oblivious. It will be better if you know that before talking to your father” he said.

“I don’t understand. I don’t understand anything. What is there to know? Is there something important that I should know? Is there?” I asked blatantly.

“If there is something, then tell me. Tell me right away why my life is so messed up all of a sudden? Why I have been thrown into all these all of a sudden and what is the reason for you killing the person whom I loved the most in my life?” he turned his head towards my direction when he heard my last question. His pupils contradicted and he gave me an icy stare.

“Drive back to home,” he told the driver and the driver obliged driving back towards the house.

My eyes pooled with tears because of his rudeness. So, I looked out of the window wanting to hide the hurtful emotions that were visible through my eyes.

I took a book out from the shelf near the dressing table.

The title of the book was ‘You kissed my soul’, a werewolf fantasy story.

I was never a fantasy genre novel reader but wanting to pass the time, I took the book and sat on the couch and spent my next few hours reading it before falling asleep on the same couch.

When I woke up, I looked out of the window when I heard some sounds from the outside.

“What’s going on?” I muttered to myself and keeping the book on the couch, I walked towards the window.

“Eee! Relax!” I saw a man raising his hands up in the air in surrender while some of the guards aimed the gun at him.

“What the fuck are you doing here? And how did you get inside?” I saw a man whose name I remembered as Max yelling at him aiming a gun at his direction.

“Put the gun down!” the man who stood in a surrender position changed his position into a mocking one by folding his hands behind his head and he smirked at Max.

“Surprise! It’s my another specialty. I can go anywhere I want. I have a special power. Magic” he said roaming his hands animatedly in the air.

“Shut up! Motherfucker!” Max yelled at him.

As soon as Max said that the man who stood before him changed his expression into a deadly one which scared me even if I was standing a floor up from them.

“Don’t curse before me” that man snarled at Max.

“Or? What will you do if I do moth-” Max was cut off by Zachary who walked towards them from the other side.

“Enough you two” Zachary said.

“Remove your gun from his direction,” Zachary said and everyone pulled down their gun except for Max.

“What is he doing here? What’s going on?” Max asked still pointing his gun at the man.

“Pull your gun down,” Zachary told him but Max chose to argue.

“But h-”

“Right now” Zachary yelled and Max instantly put his gun down.

“We will talk about all this inside,” Zachary said and I gasped when he turned his head towards my direction instantly meeting my gaze.

I stepped back and bit down on my lips. A second later, I peeped in their direction only to find them walking back inside the house.

When they were out of my sight, I wondered what was going on and who was that man at whom all of Zachary’s man pointed the gun at.

A Few hours later, there was a knock on the door which broke me out of my state of drowsiness.

“Yea- uh Come in,” I told the person and the door opened to reveal a maid of the house.

“Sir has wished to see you in his study room,” the lady said and I nodded knitting my eyebrows with confusion.

"Why does he wants to see me?" I thought.

"Okay. I am coming" I said and she nodded before going away and closing the door after her.

Hurriedly, I changed my dress into full-length sleeve shirt and blue jeans. I pulled my hair back into a ponytail and walked towards his study room. All these days wandering alone in the house has made me recognize every corner and turn off the house. Finding the study room wasn't that hard for me.

I knocked on the door and went in when I got the permission.

"Meet my wife, Juliette Sullivan," Zachary said which made me scoff at him internally for the surname.

I looked at the two man standing next to him. One was undoubtedly Max while the other man was the same man who had guns pointed at his direction, a few hours ago.

That man looked at me and smiled.

"Hello. It's nice to meet you" he said and I just gave him a small nod with a smile.

"From today onwards he is going to be your bodyguard," Zachary said out of nowhere which made my eyes widen in shock.

"What? Bodyguard? But wh-" I stopped in the middle of my sentence looking at that man. Then I gave him an odd smile and walked towards Zachary and held his hand firmly tugging it, signaling him to come to the side.

"Why do I need a bodyguard?" I whisper yelled at him once we were at a safe distance away from both of the man.

I looked back at them and saw Max glaring at him while he looked around obviously ignoring Max's stare.

"That's because I said so," Zachary said and pulled his hand out of my grip harshly.

"And don't touch me" he sneered.

"Why? Do I have germs on my hand?" I sneered back.

"Shut up!" he said.

"You shut up!" I retorted back.

"Listen!" he said in a deadly low tone.

"I have told you before and I'm repeating this again for the last time. Don't question me" he said and I glared at him crossing my hands over my chest.

"Now behave and keep quiet while I talk," he said and grabbed me by my arm and dragged me back to both of them.

“You will have to guard my wife 24×7,” Zachary said to that guy and I scoffed at him turning my head to the other side I rolled my eyes when I felt him tightening his grip on my arm.

“Look at him, when he was the one who told me not to touch him a few minutes ago,” I thought.

“He can touc- grab me but if I touch him-” my thoughts were cut off when Zachary said.

“Did you hear what I said?” he asked and I nodded even though I didn’t have any idea what he said.

“I still don’t think this is a good ide-” Max shut his mouth when Zachary gave him a stare which looked as if he was warning him to shut up.

“You were crying early about being bored. So, now you can go out” Zachary said and immediately hope of freedom lit up inside me until he threw a bucket of water on it.

“But he will be with you all the time wherever you go and wherever you are except the time you are with me,” Zachary said.

“But why do I even need a bodyguard?” I shrieked and the man shrugged his shoulders.

“For your safety” was Zachary’s curt answer.

“But who has the power to harm me except you?” I muttered to myself to which Zachary asked in a low tone “What was that?”

“Nothing,” I told him.

I looked at the man who still had this strange smile on his face.

“What’s so amusing? Why is he smiling?” I wondered.

“Take care of my wife,” Zachary said and the man nodded.

“I will. You can trust me boss!” he said and Max scoffed beside him crossing his arms over his chest.

“Your duty begins from now onwards,” Zachary said to him and he smiled nodding at me.

“Oh! I forgot to tell you my name ma’am” that man said and I waited for him to continue.

“Hello! My name is Willi Simmel” and all of a sudden something clicked inside me as and I found his name very familiar as if I had heard his name from somewhere.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 21

Juliette Pov

“Aww! It’s a beautiful day today” I said to myself and stretched my arms into the air but a moment later glared back at Willi who was following.

“Why are you following me?” I asked irritated.

“I’m your bodyguard,” he said and I rolled my eyes.

“But I’m inside the house perimeter. It’s just the garden” I said as I walked towards the bench to sit down. I could see Zachary’s men standing nearby.

So why do I need a bodyguard?

“Inside the perimeter or outside the perimeter, I have to do my work,” he said and smiled at me when I took a seat on the bench. He stood next to me and looked around.

I sighed and rested my head on my palm.

This is the first time when Zachary allowed me to walk out of the house, technically inside the house perimeter but here I am being followed like a father follows his three-year-old kid.

“C’mon! Can’t I have some time alone?” I said.

“Hey!” I turned a little from my position and said to Willi.

“I have never seen you before here,” I said and he nodded smiling.

“But why do I think as if I had already heard your name somewhere from before?” I asked and he tilted his head still smiling.

“Am I famous?” he asked all of a sudden excited.

“What th-” I thought.

“No! I mean how come you ended yourself as my bodyguard?” I asked to which he only shrugged his shoulders and gave me a smile.

“What’s with his smiling?” I thought.

“Why are you always smiling?” I asked and he looked up as if he was thinking then looked back at me and shrugged his shoulders. Again.

I gave him an incredulous look and turned around.

“Why does Zachary is the only person in this world who has such type of strange people surrounding him?” I thought and furrowed my eyebrows looking back at Willi.

I huffed out air and leaned against the bench crossing my hands over my chest.

“Well! I understood that you were just doing your work. But why are you following me inside the house?” I yelled at Willi to which he just shrugged and gave me a smile.

“I am doing my work” he replied.

“What work? Why do you need to follow me inside the house? Just go outside!” I said pointing my finger towards the door.

“I have an order from the boss,” he said which made me ball my fists in anger.

“Of course! Zachary” I gritted out.

“Tell me something,” I said.

Willi looked towards me with a questioning look.

“Are you really my bodyguard?” a frown marred his face and he furrowed his eyebrows in confusion.

“Tell me the truth! Has Zachary kept you to make me mad right? You are here to disturb my nervous system?” I said and he gave me an incredulous look but minutes later composed himself and the same stupid smile was back on his face.

“Oh, whatever!” I said throwing my hands into the air.

I walked back towards my room with him trailing behind me like a tail.

I walked into the room and shut the door on his face.

“Will he guard me inside my room too?” I thought.

I knew he was standing outside the door, guarding me.

I sighed and went towards the couch where I sat and leaned my head against it.

What Zachary told me earlier flooded back into my mind.

Look! If you want to talk to your father then you need to behave and let Willi guard you without any disturbance or stupidity.

I’m giving you two choice.

One, let Willi guard you and soon I’ll let you talk to your father.

Two, create a disturbance and you won’t be allowed to even step outside of that room ever and let’s forget about talking to your father.

When he said that I stood there in shock. How can a man say that?

But in my case, Zachary could because he wasn’t any ordinary guy after all.

I rolled around and rested my head on my elbow.

“I am bored!” I pouted.

I got up from the couch and went inside the walk-in closet where I took a blue button-up shirt and black jeans.

I changed myself into it and brushed my hair and left it down. I applied some eyeliner and mascara on my eyes and a pink lipstick on my lips.

I took my handbag and opened the door to find Willi standing next to the door with his legs crossed and he had his hands stuffed into his pant pockets.

Though I felt bad for him and I felt a little concern growing inside me for him, but all my concern was washed away when he looked back at me and smiled getting attentive.

I looked at his appearance. A brown leather jacket with a black shirt underneath and black jeans with shoes.

His brown hair was ruffled backward and if I looked closely than I could see a small tattoo on his neck.

“Are you checking me out? But you are married” he said smugly which I wanted badly wanted to slap out of his face.

“You wish!” I said and walked away from him and I knew he was following me.

“Where are we going?” he asked and I rolled my eyes when I heard the word ‘we’.

“I don’t know,” I said.

“I am bored and as I’m allowed to go out of the house” I looked back at him “of course with you tailing behind me, I want to go somewhere maybe sight seeing. I have never been to Romania before” I said and he nodded.

When we were outside, I asked a man to bring the car.

He took his phone out and I knew he called Zachary. Then he nodded and asked another man to bring the car. I stood there waiting and finally, a sleek black car came into view.

Three men came out from the car and one held the door open for me to get in.

“Wait!” I said looking at the three other man.

“Will you all be accompanying me?” I asked and all of them nodded.

“But I already had him with me,” I said gesturing at Willi.

“Boss asked us to do. He will be guarding you and boss told us that you are not allowed to go out of the house without us” one of them spoke and I clenched my teeth.

I got inside the car and the man closed the door. Willi sat on the front seat and thankfully the other three chose to take another car after us.

“Why am I under such tight security?” I muttered rubbing my forehead.

“Where do you want to go?” the driver asked and Willi looked towards me turning from his seat.

“I don’t know,” I said and looked out of the window.

“Take me to some museum maybe,” I said and the driver obliged. I looked behind from the back screen the other car following us.

“This one is closer. We will go here” I heard the driver talking on his phone.

He was talking to the other man who was behind our car.

“We are here!” the driver said and I looked out of the windscreen to see ‘Cluj-Napoca Bánffy Palace’.

I got out of the car and saw the other car parking next to our car.

Willi was by my side the whole time when we were inside the Palace. The other chased the poor guide away telling him that they could guide me to the place.

After that, we went to many other places. It was very awkward when people looked towards me because I was surrounded by five grown and built men from all the direction who looked around continuously for any threat.

It turns out that the driver was also one of Zachary’s men who was asked to follow me wherever I went. Here, I was sulking for those four men following me and one was added to it eventually.

I would click my tongue in irritation whenever they would chase away any man who came even five centimeters close to my radius.

In the old town, we went to an outdoor restaurant and I took a seat with Willi while the other four sat next to our table.

“I had a wonderful day today,” I said gulping down the water from the glass.

“It looks like it will soon be a memorable day for you too,” Willi said and I was going to ask what he means but stopped when I saw him glaring at a man some distance away from us wearing a hoodie jacket and talking on his phone.

Willi turned on his seat and whispered something to the other four guy. They gazed towards that hoodie guy and immediately turned into an alert position and looked around.

“What’s going on?” I asked and Willi looked back at me smiling.

“Nothing! I’m just skeptical. That man is following us from few minutes” Willi said and gulped down water from his glass.

He looked back at me and smiled.

“Maybe he is going the same way, we are going,” I said and he smiled even more.

“You are naive,” he said.

“Excuse me?” I asked.

“He is totally a suspect. Look at him. He is glancing our way every second thinking he may lose us from his sight. He is totally calling his men giving them our location” Willi said playing with his glass.

“Oh no! What are we going to do? Is he dangerous?” I asked and he pursed his lips and then smirked at me.

“Just act as if you don’t know anything,” Willi said and from the corner of the eyes looked towards the man.

“Let’s get out of here,” I said and he shook his head no.

“If you do that now and if is really after you. He will shoot you” he said and it was enough to scare me.

“Why will he shoot me? What did I do?” I asked terrified.

“What am I gonna do now?” I asked and he gave me a smile.

“Blow a kiss, fire a gun,” he said and in that moment I gave him an incredulous look.

“We need someone to lean on” he sang and I wanted to smack that glass on his face.

“You are singing? At this time?” I gritted out.

“All we need is somebody to lean on,” he said and as I was going to smack him like a reflex action he lunged forward and ducked my head downwards when we heard a gun shot with people screaming and running. It was directed towards me because the same glass from which I drank water a few minutes ago shattered into pieces cutting my skin. The bullet missed me and it shot the glass before me.

“Oh my god!” I screamed petrified.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 22

Juliette Pov

I cried and looked around frantically for help. It was chaos everywhere. People screaming and running away and Zachary's man shot back to the people who were now shooting our way.

I peeped from the table to see that they were increasing in number and we were in trouble because the number of men in their group increased and it was literally affecting Willi and the others.

"We are going to die" I squeaked in surprise when one of our men got a bullet in his shoulder and he fell on the ground right next to my hiding place with a loud thump.

"Oh, my god! Oh my god!" was the only thing that came out of my mouth.

"Hurry! Get inside" Willi screamed pointing towards the cafe's door which was open.

I avoided him and tried to hold that man who lied next to me and drag him with me.

"What are you doing? Just get inside" Willi yelled but I ignored him once again.

"Ma'am let go and please get inside," the injured man said wincing in pain.

"Get inside!" Willi yelled.

"Shut up!" I said which made him shut his mouth in a second.

"He risked his life-saving mine and you want me to leave everything and run away? Who do you think I am and what am I?" I gritted out and without paying attention to him anymore, I pulled the man from his torso towards the door.

A table was saving us from the gunshots.

With utter difficulty, we made it inside and I made the man sit up and lean against the wall where I took a handkerchief out of my bag and applied it to his wound.

"Th-Thank You," he said and I nodded.

"What are we going to do? Why are they after us? What did I do?" I shot questions at the wounded man and he took the handkerchief from me tying it around his wound.

"I don't have any idea. We are soon going to be out of bullets and then we might be a problem" he said and I put my hand on my mouth saving myself from screaming.

"Don't worry this has been informed to Boss. Our men will be on their way. We just need to hang up a little more" he said and I fell on my knees not really believing him.

“This is all happening because of me. People are getting injured just because of me. But I don’t even know what I did to get all this” I cried silently and the man looked at me pitifully.

“We are out of bullets” I heard Willi.

I moved towards the door and from my sitting position peeped at him.

“Then come inside!” I whisper yelled at him and the other man.

“What are you doing there? Close the door!” he ordered.

“You are not my boss. Just come inside” I demanded which made him look up at the others.

The others were too hiding behind the tables and were looking at him clearly confused.

“We can’t! We need to save you” one of the men said.

“Then I don’t want to be saved risking other people's lives. Just get inside!” I demanded and as soon as I said that the gunshots began.

I squealed and dived back in fear when a bullet hit the door.

“Careful!” yelled Willi.

“Damn!” I heard another guy and I peep through the space between the hinge and the door to the driver of ours from before, holding his left eye in his hand as blood flowed down.

“Oh my-” I kept my hand on my mouth horrified.

“Stay back!” Willi said.

Seconds later we heard the gunshot stopping and I had this idea that they knew about our condition. We were completely out of bullets.

“They are coming this way!” the man who shot his shoulder beforehand spoke looking through the small opening of the window.

“We gotta use our hands then!” Willi said and he positioned himself in a lunging one, preparing to lunge forward when they were near.

“He is aiming his gun this. Don’t do that” I cried looking at Willi. If he lunged at him then definitely he was going to die.

“We have no choice,” he said.

I sat back on my position and leaned against the wall feeling helpless. If this was how we were going to die, then I was definitely going to die a painful death.

Memories of a body falling before me, pooled with blood flooded back into my mind. It was happening again. First, it was Emmett and now it’s the one who is ready to die willingly just to save a pity soul like me.

This made me cry even more because I wasn't worth their lives. If risking their own life saving a pitiful one like mine was the cost that they were going to pay then I would be more than happy to die if that could save theirs.

I breathed in and out. I was feeling dizziness now. My head began to rotate and I held my head with my hand wincing and whimpering.

"Why am I so helpless?" I found myself talking.

"Why am I so pitiful?" I cried out.

"Why? Why am I so weak?" I pulled my hair in frustration.

I closed my eyes in aggravation. A weakling like me doesn't deserve to live. What am I? What did I do?

I can never forget that it was me for whom a person died earlier and I am the same person for whom again several lives are in danger.

Then we heard the gunshots. Again.

I closed my eyes and held my hands on my ears not wanting to hear the screams of the people who were dying. Just because of me.

"No! No! No!"

"Stop it!" I yelled.

"Ma'am!"

"Ma'am!" I opened my eyes and looked at the man next to me who was wounded earlier on his shoulder.

"Look outside! It's our man! They are here" he said and I couldn't believe what he was saying.

I could hear people screaming and the gunshots. I thought that they reached here and they killing Zachary's man.

Gathering up courage, I looked through the space between the door and the hinge to see several men firing from the other side of the road.

They were shooting at the man who were near us whose intention was to harm us.

"It's our boss!" I heard Willi and hope lit up inside me when I got up on my feet and looked towards the way where Willi was looking.

Sure enough there he was. But he was wearing a mask on his face covering his face and he was wearing a black jacket covering his body.

I would never have recognized him if it wasn't for Willi. I guess Willi was accustomed to Zachary's way of fighting and showing up in public.

Then it clicked me. According to public, Zachary was a billionaire businessman but they had no idea about his dark side which was a mafia leader.

Obviously, he would never show up his true self before the public. He was shielding his face and his identity from the ordinary people.

“Take it losers!” I heard a man from our side screaming in victory.

Our enemies were circled from all the direction by Zachary’s man. And this time they were the one who was out of bullets. I looked as Zachary walked aiming his gun towards the hoody man from before. I had no idea what was Zachary thinking or doing.

“Surrender yourself if you want to live,” a man from Zachary’s side said to the enemies.

“You wish!” the hoody man said and pointed his gun directly at Zachary’s direction. Immediately, several guns were aimed at him by Zachary’s man.

But it was Zachary who stood there calmly and patiently with no hint of fear in his body. He crossed his hands over his chest and waited for the hoody man to take his next step.

I wanted to scream.

Its funny how I am the one who doesn’t the same person who killed my love die before me. I prayed internally and hoped that Zachary would step out of the way or he would get hurt. Worst, he would die.

The hooded man laughed. A good throaty laughing before he pointed the gun back at his direction and bam.

I closed my eyes not wanting to see what happened.

It happened so quickly that nobody got any chance to do anything. The man killed himself.

“But why?” I thought.

I breathed in and out and then in and out. It was too much for a day. It was my first time encountering so much death and blood before me.

I felt nauseous now, so I leaned back at the wall to save myself from tumbling down.

I could hear their footsteps. He was coming.

I kept my hand on my eyes shielding them from seeing any more blood. It was just enough for a day or should I say lifetime? I don’t wish to see blood even from a small cut on my hand or anything. It was enough.

I felt his cold hand on mine and I felt him removing my hand from my eyes. But I refused to open to open my eyes. I refused to see any more blood or pain.

I felt him wrapping something around me and my head was covered using a cloth. No words came out of my mouth when I felt myself being scooped up from the ground into his arms.

I couldn't see anything and I was glad that I couldn't. I clutched tightly on his shirt while he carried me back towards where I guessed was the car.

"Boss!" I recognized that voice as Willi's.

"Destroy the CCTV," Zachary said.

"And provide them hospitality," he said and I guessed that it was for his man who was hurt saving me.

I felt myself being kept inside the car. The cold leather seats made me squirm and I felt his arms encircling around my shoulders pulling me next his warm body.

"What is going on?"

"Why am I leaning against him as if my life depended on him?"

"Why am I not pushing him away?"

"How can I like the warmth of his body when I knew he was a much cold and ruthless man from inside?" I thought and clutched tightly to his hands that encircled me.

"How can I be relieved when I should be running away from him for he was the reason of all this which was happening to me today?"

"Like I have said before," I heard him speaking for the first time.

I waited for him to complete was what he was saying.

"I leave you for a minute and you end up getting into trouble" he finished and as much I denied that my inner-self agreed with him, which was disturbing.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 23

Zachary Pov

I carried her back to the room and made her sit on the bed. I went to the bathroom and got rid of my jacket and kept the mask inside the basin. It had some bloodstains on it. Quickly, I turned the tap on and let the water wash away the fresh stains.

It wasn't mine. I didn't even have a scratch on my body. I knew he was going to shoot himself. I sighed thinking that if I would have caught him then I would have got much information from him but no worries, I have already captured some of his men and I do have his cell phone with me.

But the thing which kept nagging me was why did he attack Juliette. Well, I knew that she would have a situation like this in the near future, but it's just too soon. Or was it a warning?

If they wanted to kill Juliette, they could have. Easily.

But they didn't. Were they really after Juliette or was it just a warning that they can kill her easily?

I kept my hands on my hips and looked up inhaling deeply.

"Why did I get into this?" I thought.

I turned the tap off and kept now clean mask on the side and took the first aid box out from the small compartment near the mirror and went out to Juliette.

She had been a mess. She is not even talking.

"I guess she is traumatized for the second time. No, it's the third time" I wondered.

"Clean yourself," I said showing the first aid box before her.

She didn't even move. Her eyes were fixated on something, nothing in particular and she sat there like a statue not even blinking. But I noticed her trembling hands.

"Juliette!" I called.

"Hey!" I snapped my fingers before her eyes but no movement.

"Do I have to do this too?" I muttered and brought the stool from the dressing table and sat before her opening the first aid box.

I took the cotton and the antiseptic liquid and applied it on the scratch on her forehead. She didn't even wince.

"Juliette!" I asked in a low voice. She didn't even move.

“Ok, now I’m worried!” I thought and gradually reached for her hand which was trembling. Her cold hands trembled against mine warm ones and I sighed feeling little guilty that she has to see all this.

“Juliette!” I said again and when she didn’t respond reluctantly I kept her hand on the side and I did which would snap her out.

I slapped her thigh and it worked because she gasped and jerked up in her seat looking at me with her widened eyes.

“What?” she snapped.

“Now that you are awake. Clean yourself!” I said throwing the first aid box on her and she caught it with ease. I stood up from my place and took my jacket.

“Mom will be coming back today. My grandfather is coming with her too” when I said that I looked at her through the mirror to see her looking at nothing in particular. Lost. Again.

“Juliette!” I snapped which made her look at me and she stood up from her seat now attentive.

“Go and get a bath. Eat and sleep. It will be late when Mom will reach here. So you will meet her and grandfather tomorrow. We are having a small welcome party for him tomorrow” I said and she nodded.

“Don’t embarrass me there!” I said which made her glare at me.

As surprising at it sounds but she was the first woman in my life who had the audacity to glare at me with fearing my presence. Well, after mom of course.

“I won’t be coming back today,” I said and took my wallet.

I was heading out for an important business meeting and I had already instructed Max to take care the matter in here. And about Willi. He will always remain under my watch. At first, I thought he was just playing with me making a story telling me that he was against Nicholas in this battle.

But then, he really saved Juliette. He could have easily killed Juliette back there with ease. This is surprising as well as disturbing. A chance of trying to make him look loyal to me is possible. Because Nicholas may have tried to make him look loyal before me by attacking Juliette in public and then Willi saving Juliette. It can be a plan.

I know that the only way to reach Nicholas was Willi. If I had killed Willi that day then I would have never traced that bastard again in my life. So there is only one choice left. Play with them in their own game.

But Juliette had to pay for all this. She is really innocent to be dragged into all this. It would have been very easy if she knew everything in the beginning.

I glanced back at her and walked out of the room when she didn't say anything.

"Seth" I saw him walking towards me. He bowed a little before speeding my way.

"Make sure to have an eye on Willi. He may be Juliette's bodyguard but you and Kyle are the real bodyguard of Juliette. And if he tries anything stupid or suspecting, you are free to put him in the cellar. I will handle him after I come back" I said and he nodded understanding.

"And grandpa is coming tomorrow" when I said it, his eyes widened in shock.

The ex-mafia leader was coming back after a decade.

"General?" he asked surprised.

They all called him 'General'.

"Yes! So prepare for a small welcome party. Remember this, he is no longer involved in this mafia world so don't talk about anything related to this to him and he isn't coming here for any business either" I told him and watched as confusion marred his face.

"Then?" he asked.

I sighed and looked up towards the window where Juliette used to stand occasionally.

"He is coming to meet his daughter-in-law," I said and got inside my car and drove off to my office.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 24

Juliette Pov

When I woke up I heard a lot of commotion going on. I sat up on my bed and pushing the quilt aside, I put on my robe and walked towards the door. I saw people walking here and there and some were working on the walls.

They were decorating the walls with flowers. While the others were decorating and placing everything in proper place and were cleaning the area.

I chose to head back into the room and towards the bathroom to get ready. I took a shower, shampooing my hair and then brushed my teeth.

I wore a yellow knee-length dress with a white sandal and tied my hair. I did my make up and wore my cardigan before leaving the room. I saw a lady wearing a business suit instructing the people for the work.

“Excuse me,” I asked.

“Yes?” she turned around but her eyes widened and she took a bow.

She was literally taller than me and I felt a little awkward for such a gesture.

“Good Morning Ma’am” she greeted smiling showing her perfect white teeth.

“Good Morning! What’s going on?” I asked looking around.

“And who are you?” I asked not knowing who she was.

“Hello ma’am I am Cosmina Ciora,” she said and I nodded.

“And I am Mr. Sullivan’s secretary” she finished.

“I am here to organize for the welcome party his grandfather today,” she said and then it clicked me.

“Yes! Zachary did tell me yesterday about this. How could I forgot?” I whispered.

“Where are they?” I asked.

I thought they must be already home because Zachary did tell me that they will be reaching in the midnight.

“Unfortunately they had to miss the flight. So they will be arriving near” she checked her wrist watch.

“Probably four O’ clock in the evening,” she said and I just sighed crossing my hand across each other.

“Where is Zachary?” I found myself asking even though I didn’t want to know wherever he was.

“He is in his office building. He will be here before them. It is what he told me” she said and I nodded.

“So can I help you in anything?” I asked to which she shook her head no smiling.

“My work is almost finished,” she said.

“Okay! I am going to have my breakfast. You can ask me anything if you want” I told her and she nodded.

I went towards the kitchen room and asked Mrs. Serban who was our head Kitchen staff to prepare me something to eat.

I went toward the dining hall but stopped in my tracks when I saw a door to a room open.

“What’s this?” I thought.

Never did I ever notice that there was a room present there. I looked around for someone and slowly walked towards the room. The door was slightly open and I saw the painting which should be where the door was out of its place and now it was hanging left to the door.

Slowly, walking towards the door, I went inside but not before peeping through the open space wanting to know what’s inside.

The room was darker than I thought. Nevertheless, I went inside and searched for the switchboard for light. I was searching for it when I heard some noises coming from inside the room.

Though I couldn’t see anything still I followed the noises and walked towards the source.

“Ow!” I winced in pain my foot hit something hard.

“What was that?” I thought and bent down a little trying to touch and feel what it was.

When my finger came in contact with that, I came to know that it was just a small stool.

I rubbed the spot on my foot and then continued walking from where I could still hear the noises.

The nearer I got, the clearer the noises were.

I walked what felt like a small passage with walls only two to three feet away from me as if I was walking through a secret passage.

“It will be better if you tell the exact location of Nicholas” I heard a man speaking.

“Fuck off!” another man said and laughed but soon whimpered and screamed as if he was in pain.

“I am no mood of playing motherf*ucker,” the man said. This voice seemed familiar to me.

“What’s going on?” I thought.

“Tell me why did you try to kill madam Juliette?” the same man asked and I heard the another one again screaming in pain accompanying with some cursing.

“Wait! Did he say madam Juliette? Why are they talking about me?” I wondered.

“I am not going to tell you anything,” the man who was screaming said.

I walked little closer when I saw a flicker of light coming through the hinge of a door.

Curious to know what was going on I went near the door and surprisingly the door had a glass screen on it. I could see through it only if I stood on my tip toes.

I saw a room and saw a man chained to the wall and the man was bleeding from all where.

A gasp came out of my mouth when I saw his condition.

“What is this?” I thought clasping a hand to my mouth from stopping myself from screaming seeing the sight before me.

“Tell me! Why did Nicholas ask you to kill madam Juliette?” the man whom I recognized as Max asked the man.

“Nicholas? Who is Nicholas? And why does he want to kill me?” I thought horrified.

I don’t even know anyone the name of Nicholas let alone have any enmity and here he wants to kill me? But why?

“I told you. I am not going to tell you anything. So, shut the fuck off moth-” he screamed in pain when Max hit him hard using a whip.

“Oh yes you are going to tell me everything about Nicholas because I am not going to sit down until you give me all the information,” Max said as he rolled the end of the whip around his hand.

“I will like to die rather than telling you anything about the boss,” the man, chained to the wall said hissing in pain.

“Oh yeah?” Max asked as he took a seat before him on the chair.

“You know what? As much as I want to kill you I can’t. Because boss has ordered me to spill all the information out of you. So for that, you need to be alive but don’t worry! I will keep on torturing you and I will make you beg me to kill you” Max chuckled before standing up on his feet and whipped the man hard which caused an ear piercing scream out of his mouth.

“Oh my god!” I whispered and not wanting to see all that I turned around and ran hitting myself few times in the dark.

When I reached the door, I pulled the door open and ran avoiding Mrs. Serban who was calling me for my breakfast. I ran past Cosmina and dodging all of the people out of my way, I ran back into my room closing the door shut behind me.

I slid against the door and held my head pulling my hair.

“Why? Why? Why is this all happening with me?” I screamed hitting the floor.

“Why is everything so wrong with my life?”

“Why is everything like this all of a sudden in my life?” I screamed and facepalm myself.

“Somebody is trying to kill me and I don’t even know what did I even do for that man wanting me dead” I sobbed.

“Who is Nicholas?” I yelled.

“Is this all happening because of you?” I thought.

I thought and leaned against the door tumbling on the floor.

“Then what does Zachary has to do with all this?” I thought all of a sudden.

“Nicholas..” I whispered to myself.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 25

Juliette Pov

I dressed even though the only thing that I ever wanted to run away, very far away from where there was no link to the mafia. But I doubt Zachary would ever let me go away this easily.

He would make sure to make his men follow my butt until they find me and drag back to him. Ironically, if I get back he won't even do anything to me. He will only put me into house arrest.

Strange! As much strange this sounds but that man never put his hands on me let alone harass me. So, as I had eavesdropped beforehand in that strange room, I got to know that there is a man named Nicholas who wants me dead and Zachary is trying to find him but in the same way, he is even trying to protect me.

"Why is he protecting me?" I wondered.

I was sure, one and hundred percent sure that he wasn't involved anything but romantically with me. Sure, he saved me but it was only because he was trying to save but my question is why?

And what does all this has to do with him forcefully marrying me, killing Emmett in the process?

How is Emmett related to all this?

I sighed and reprimanded myself for thinking any longer. I would surely end up with a burst vein in my brain if I think any longer about that callous man. Zachary. I don't understand why that man has to be so hard, secretive, protective and mysterious.

I doubt he would ever open his mouth on all this. But the fact that he agreed to let me even meet my father surprised me. Never had I ever imagined that he would come forward and tell me that 'I will let you meet your father. But Behave!'

What does he mean by behaving?

I'm not a dog that I will just sit and stand up only by the flick of his fingers. And have I ever denounced him in front of anyone? Ever?

I looked at myself in the mirror.

I was wearing a half sleeve short red dress for the party with red stilettos. I wanted something comfortable for the small welcome party hence I didn't want to wear any gown or anything that would stick to my skin.

Everything in my life was somewhat suffocating and the only thing that I could do was to at least wear a dress which would let me breathe comfortably. Moreover, I wanted to know about Zachary's grandfather. I wanted to know how his rest of his family was.

I wasn't sure if his mother knew anything about his other side or not but his father. There was something about Gale that made suspicious. The way he talked, the way he walked and sometimes I even heard him talk on his phone. His tone was same as Zachary. Commanding and demanding. Though he was always friendly and sweet to me, yet I just couldn't get myself trust him. It was like I knew what it was but the thing was I just couldn't put my finger on it.

I bet Zachary's grandfather would be nothing like him. Seeing the preparations for him, the colors and the flowers, I sense he must be a welcoming person in general.

I made my way out and went towards the living. Everything was ready and people of the house were eagerly waiting for mom and him to arrive.

I looked around for Zachary. Cosmina told me earlier that he will be here before they arrive and that made me wonder where in the world is he?

"What's wrong with you? Why are you searching for him?" I heard my inner voice mocking me.

I rubbed my arm and bit down on my lips. I saw Cosmina wearing a beautiful blue bodycon dress with high heels dressed up perfectly and see was talking on her phone which I probably guessed maybe Zachary?

"Again Zachary!" my inner voice mocked.

I grew impatient on this and decided upon gulping down water for I was feeling thirsty all of a sudden. It's not like I was nervous or something for I was meeting his grandfather for the first time. It was that I was careless. I wasn't dressed to impress nor was I hoping that his grandfather would like me.

I spotted a small water filter kept on the table across the room and I made my way to there to drink the water.

I took a glass and filled it water when I heard everyone cheering and clapping.

"Welcome!"

"General!"

"General?" I thought.

Everyone scurried to the front door and the place was crowded, yet I chose to drink the water first before presenting myself before him. It will be awkward if I squeak before him like a squirrel because of thirst.

So hurriedly, I gulped down the water but I could still feel thirsty. I filled the glass for the second time and I was just going to drink the water when my eyes glanced towards the front gate.

Literally, my hands began to tremble in fear as I looked at the man who was supposed to me Zachary's grandfather. Mom and dad were standing next to him with a smile on their face while others surrounded them shooting them with questions.

But my blood dried up my face when I recognized the man. The fear that I felt was unfathomable. I knew I was right as I looked at him, again and again trying to deny the fact that he wasn't whom I am imagining right now to be.

"Avim Ben Gon?" his name came out like a whisper from my mouth and I felt the glass slipping from my hands. The glass fell down on the floor shattering into pieces and between all those commotions before anybody could notice me I scurried my way out towards the corridor away from the living room.

I was running now. Literally, running wearing those damn stilettos and before I could comprehend what happened, I tumbled down on the ground face plant.

Still, I didn't stop, I crawled on my butt kicking my legs in the air like a maniac until I propped up on my elbows and then stood back on my feet. I was scared as hell and as well as determined to get away.

Any normal person in my place would do that. I saw the most ruthless man ever that existed in this world.

"Avim Ben Gon" I muttered horrified as I ran across the corridor and towards a door which I believed would take me to the backside of the house.

"He is alive?" the words merely came out of my mouth in disbelief.

I huffed and panted once I was out of the house. I leaned against the door and pulled my hair.

Avim Ben Gon was the mafia leader who was killed by the police in a public meet.

"Killed? Really?" I thought as I recalled seeing his face just a few second ago under the same roof.

Never in a billion years, I would have thought I would ever come face to face with him, a murderer, a criminal, a rapist, the sole reason of people attempting suicide, attacks, bomb blasts, trafficking and what not.

"Oh my god!" I screamed petrified.

I felt my heart beat beating tremendously against my chest.

"Is all this that happened to me not enough for you?" I screamed on God.

“If you are there then please tell me, what did I ever do to ge-” I stopped mid-sentence when I heard a gunshot followed by a person’s muffled screaming.

Still petrified, I walked cautiously through the bush and hid myself and then I spotted just a few feet away from my location, Zachary standing with his gun pointing towards a man crunched down on his knee before him.

Zachary mercilessly shot the man in the head and immediately I screamed. I screamed petrified, horrified to see the man laying limp on the ground and I recognized the man from earlier who was chained in that room.

All of their eyes were on me. Zachary narrowed his gaze at me and immediately he spotted me inside the bush.

“Get her!” he commanded his boys and they all nodded coming towards me.

“No! No! No!” I screamed and jumped out of the bush and the next thing I knew was I was running with them following me. I ran as fast as I can with those shoes still on and occasionally tripping and stumbling on the grass but maintained a pace as I ran away from all those murderers.

“No! Let me go!” I screamed once I felt a man holding me by my wrist stopping me from running.

I thrashed against his hold and tried to punch him but another man interfered by holding my another arm.

“Let me go!” I screamed with tears pooling my eyes. I screamed and thrashed wanting to be set free.

“Why? Why? Why?” I sobbed but still didn’t stop wriggling and thrashing around to loosen their hold on me.

“Juliette!” I stopped more like froze on my spot when I saw Zachary walking towards me. But the only thing that I noticed was the gun that he was holding.

It was dark but the only thing which made us easier to see was the light from the house windows.

“No! Don’t come near me,” I cried and struggled to get myself free.

“Juliette!” he said but I screamed scared that he might hurt me now.

He raised his hand in which he was holding the gun. I thought that he was going to shoot me but when I screamed and literally begged to let me go I noticed something extraordinary in his eyes. He looked calm as always not even bothered by the surrounding or even the people that were holding me.

He gave the gun to a man standing near me and he took it and kept it back into his jacket.

“Juliett-” Zachary begun but I cut him off.

“N-No! S-Stay a-way fro-m me” I managed to utter and at this, I didn’t quite decipher his look.

He looked hurt, but then confused and all of a sudden determined.

“Juliette listen to m-” he said but yet again I cut him off.

“Let me go! Why are you doing all this to me? What did I ever do?” I screamed.

“I saw Avim Ben Gon. H-He was supposed to be dead but here he is. Is he your grandfather? What else is left to-” he stopped me when immediately he came forward and held my arm and snatched them from the people who were holding me beforehand.

“Leave!” he told them and in a second they were gone.

“Let me go!” I screamed and winced when he folded my arms on my back holding me in my place close go him. Being, this much close to him made me even more panicked than I already was which made me struggle to save my life from him.

“Calm down,” he said and I couldn’t believe him.

“Let me go” I struggled against his hold but all my actions were going into vain.

“Juli-”

“Damn you, Zachary! Let me g-” my words were cut in my throat when I felt his lips on mine.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 26

Zachary Pov

“Oh there they ar- Oh my!” I heard my mom.

Instantly, I pulled away from Juliette and looked behind her to find grandpa, mom and dad standing.

“Juliette?” my mom called.

I looked back at Juliette to see her standing like a statue. Shocked.

Her mouth was slightly open and she gazed towards nowhere in particular, lost. As much as I have noticed her, she does that whenever she is in shock or surprised. She would become a statue, and she wouldn’t even blink until someone calls for her.

She was screaming and struggling against me a few seconds ago and that is when I marked my family walking towards us. It would have been a trouble if they heard her so, the only way to shut her was to...

And then she witnessed me killing before her with her own eyes. It’s not like she has never witnessed something like this beforehand, so why is she all frightened up all of a sudden?

I had to kill the man because that man escaped from the cellar from underground and he was trying to climb through the pipeline towards the window of my room, to get Juliette. I didn’t know if Juliette was still in the room or not and the man managed to get a knife from somewhere. It was dangerous.

When I got back, I found my phone ringing and to attend that I walked towards the backyards and then I noticed the man climbing up towards the window.

It was shocking for me to see him there, and the only thought that came to my mind was Juliette. So, I pulled out my gun from my back and the next moment I heard the gunshot. I shot him in his ankle, he screamed in pain, the knife fell down from his mouth when he screamed.

I saw my men running towards us when they heard the gunshot.

“Boss!” one of them said.

“What were you doing? How did he get there?” I sneered.

He looked up and saw the man still holding the line, wincing in pain.

“I will deal with you later,” I said and aimed at the man for the second time. The bullet went piercing his thigh muscles and blood oozed out his skin and this time he lost his balance and he fell down just before me.

“How did you get out of there?” I asked as calmly as I could.

“Huh! I have my ways” the man snarled at me, even if he was the one on his knee before me.

“Oh really?” I asked sarcastically rotating the gun from its barrel.

“Where is Willi?” I asked my man and they all looked at each other.

“He is with Seth,” one of the men answered.

“All this time?” I asked and he nodded.

“Wait! Willi? Willi Simmel? He is with you?” the man before me on his knees questioned with difficulty.

“Surprise!” I said sarcastically.

“That traitor!” he took a fistful of grass and pulled it out in anger ad annoyance.

So Willi didn’t help him out. Interesting. That means there is someone else within my territory, backstabbing me?

“What is your plan?” I asked and saw as his expression turned to that of a murderous one before he smirked at me.

“Nothing! Just to kill your pretty wif-” he fell on the ground limp when I shot him directly on his forehead and it was when we heard a scream. I jerked up towards the direction and I narrowed my eyes to find it none other than Juliette.

She was hiding inside a bush and as soon as she saw me she dashed towards the other way.

“Get her!” I commanded my boys.

“Boss, you killed him” one of the men who stayed behind said looking at the body before us.

“It’s okay. He is no use to us now. Get rid of the body” I said and walked towards the way where Juliette was.

“What was she even doing there?” I thought.

I have been dealing with a woman, who was sarcastic, who would argue with me, who had the nerve to glare at me, who would faint if trapped inside a room, who was happy at one moment and sad in the other, who was strong enough to deal with all these situation where she was today. But never had I saw her this frightened.

The fact that she was frightened by me, somehow made me feel hurt.

Why the hell was I even feeling hurt when she flinched away from my touch?

Was I expecting that maybe she was the one who would look at me as if I am even with all of the people? As if I am not someone out of the place as if I do have a heart as if I'm just a normal person?

Why?

Why was I even expecting all these from her from all of the other people?

How was she different?

Just because she argued with me, glared at me, wrapped her arms around mine whenever I scoop her up in my arms doesn't mean she sees me as a normal person. I can never be a normal person.

I am 'The mafia Boss' after all. Cold, ruthless, arrogant is what people call me. I am the one who is to be avoided to mess with or even be avoided even if I wanted to talk because in their language, my talking is not normal but a hint that they are my prey or a hint that stay away from me.

So how is Juliette different?

We both know that we are not even close to all that husband and wife word. We both know how we got married. Then why?

"Why do you expect something from her Zachary?" my inner-self questioned me.

I could have just muffled her mouth using my hand or should have warned her or maybe threatened her to shut up when I saw my family coming our way.

But did I kiss her?

"Are you angry Zachary? Because she didn't live up to your expectations? Is this why you kissed her?" my inner-self asked.

I looked back at Juliette still standing there like a statue.

"What is wrong with her? It's just a kiss" I thought.

"I thought she was in a relationship with that Nicholas. Although it was fake from his side, but I thought.."

"Why are you clenching your fist Udolf?" I heard my grandfather and I looked down to find my palms clenched in a tight fist.

"So now Juliette kissing someone else affects you?" my inner-self mocked me.

"Oh no! It's nothing," I said and gazed back at Juliette.

"Let's get inside dear," my mom asked Juliette who was still standing there like a statue.

I found my hands reaching towards her. As soon as I touched her she jerked out of her thoughts and looked up at me blinking her eyes few times.

“You alright?” mom asked looking worried.

She genuinely liked Juliette. I have never seen her acting so warmly towards any other woman near me. Even Cosmina never saw her warmest side. Is she kind towards Juliette because of me?

Does she expect what I certainly expect from Juliette?

Why?

“Yeah! Y-Yeah!” Juliette said clearing her throat.

“So let’s get inside?” mom asked and I saw Juliette nodding.

Mom held her arms and all of them walked back towards the house.

“Is everything alright between you two Udolf?” grandfather asked looking between us.

“Y-Yeah! It’s good to see you after so many days grandpa,” I said and hugged him.

He laughed and hugged me back patting my back.

I didn’t hug him because I was affectionate all of a sudden or anything but because I was avoiding his eye contact for he would have noticed my discomfort and uneasiness because he was called the ‘General’ after all. He was expert in reading people’s mind.

I didn’t want him to find out.

“If I would have known that not meeting you for some years would affect you and you would hug me then I would have considered going away from you from the beginning,” he chuckled.

“Grandpa!” I chuckled pulling away from me.

“Let’s get inside first. I have a lot to share with you and I am eager to meet your wife” he said and I nodded.

“You go first! I am coming. I have an important phone call to make,” I said pulling my phone out of my pocket.

“You sure?” he asked and I nodded smiling.

“Okay! Don’t take too long,” he said and walked back towards the house.

I looked at his retreating back and pushed the phone back into my pant pocket.

“I wish you would have taught how to deal with all these thoughts and emotions that I am feeling right now grandpa,” I muttered to myself as I turned around shoving my hands back into the pant pockets.

I sighed and lowered my head thinking.

“I know why I kissed you” I whispered to myself.

“Only to shut you. Nothing else” I said and nodded to myself thinking if ever she argued upon why I kissed her then I would tell her the truth, the reason for kissing her was “Because I was angr-”

“No!” I rubbed my palm on my face.

“Because the act was meant to shut her. Nothing else!” I nodded satisfied at the line.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 27

Juliette Pov

“Ah! So finally we are meeting” Zachary’s grandfather laughed sitting before me on the dining table. Zachary chose to sit next to me and mom on my next. Dad was sitting beside Zachary’s grandfather and Cosmina was too joining us for the dinner and she was sitting next to dad.

“U-” I was cut off when I felt Zachary’s hand on mine.

Why did he kiss me?

It’s strange, but immediately my cheeks burned and I felt myself blushing recalling the incident that just happened a few minutes ago.

“Of course to shut you” my subconscious mocked at me.

"I don’t think so” I retorted back.

No matter how strange it felt, my heart didn’t agree on the fact that he kissed me just to shut me. I felt anger and frustration when he kissed me.

But what did I do?

Was it because I intervened in the middle of his work?

Maybe..

But why am I meeting his grandfather? I couldn’t even deny when he asked me to join him for the dinner. He wanted to talk to me. What does he want to talk to me? To me? What did I do? Don’t tell me that he want to use me as a human bomb or some spy or something like that..peculiar.

Damn it!

What are you doing Juliette? Sitting so quietly and stiffly? Just get up and run. He is a danger. Scream or call the police.

“I don’t have a phone,” I said out loud which resulted on Zachary squeezing my hand tightly.

“Uh?” Zachary’s grandfather asked looking puzzled.

“Phone?” he questioned.

I glanced to my right to find Zachary already glaring at me. I gave out a nervous laugh and looked back at everyone who was looking at me as if I had two horns on my head.

Why are you so stupid?

"I- uh- Yeah! I lost my phone back there. Yes, I lost my phone. I can't find it. So I was telling to Zachary that I lost my phone" I nodded and looked back at Zachary who narrowed his eyes at me "I lost my phone" I told him and he gave out a forced smile to me.

"Oh! Phone. Don't worry I will gift a new phone to my daughter-in-law" he said smiling at me. His smile was not that evil or that mocking one that we usually see in movies or pictures, but a genuine warm one. He looked as if he was a normal person enjoying a supper with his family. I would have been so comfortable if only I didn't know his true identity.

Who knows if he is masking his mafia facade.

"No! N-No!" It's alright. You don't need to" I told him laughing nervously. I felt sweats forming at the forehead and neck out of nervousness.

What sin did I do to end up like a family like this? God help me! Please! I swear I will be donating my blood every six months and will be donating necessities to the poor if only you help me survive and walk out alive out of this family.

"My wife will be joining us next week," he said and I felt Zachary removing his hands from mine. Immediately, I felt myself shamelessly missing his warmth.

You are shameless.

I lowered my head feeling shameless. My own inner-self is mocking and taunting me now for being shamelessly wanting a man's touch who did nothing but destroyed the every single thing that I loved.

Why did he kiss me?

I wanted to punch myself for thinking about the same thing again and again. I looked towards him to find him talking and occasionally smiling at his grandfather.

He looks so unaffected.

Of course! Unlike you, he isn't even affected by that kiss. It must be so easy for him.

I clenched my palms into a tight fist and pursed my lips.

"What is your name?" I looked up to find grandfather looking at me smiling warmly.

"Juliette," I told him and he nodded.

"Very nice name," he said looking at Zachary.

"Do you love her Udolf?" he asked and somehow I felt myself cringing at his question.

Of course! he doesn't.....

"Yes," Zachary said not even looking at me.

“Hmm,” I looked back at grandfather. Though he was smiling and nodding at Zachary his eyes looked questioning. As if he was unsure and he was doubting all this.

“Why didn’t grandma join you in the trip?” Zachary asked.

“She is with Kristian now. Kristian will be joining us too” he replied and I looked back at Zachary thinking who Kristian was.

“Kristian is his cousin brother,” mom whispered to me probably noticing my expression.

“Oh!” I replied to myself.

“It’s been a long time since I have seen him” dad spoke after a long time.

“Indeed!” mom replied.

The dinner was served and we all began eating. I could hardly gulp down any food because of all the thoughts revolving in my mind. So, I tried to concentrate more on my food trying to forget that the ex-mafia leader was sitting before me and eating casually as if he has never committed all those sins and crime that I saw on the tv when I was little.

Trying to forget that Zachary, the present mafia leader who is also my husband is sitting next to me eating his food casually as if he had never married me or even killed anyone before me.

Trying to forget mom and dad who were eating their food so casually as if they oblivious to the fact that his father and her father-in-law is the world’s topmost dangerous man sitting alive with us. As if they do not know what their own son, Zachary has done to me.

Trying to forget Cosmina, who was eating her food so casually as if she doesn’t even have any idea who Zachary was and with what type of people she was dealing with.

So why should I not eat?

Unlike them, I couldn’t forget what my true identity was. What has happened to me. Why am I even sitting between them?

Still, I munched down on my food mentally thinking if I was going to get an ice-cream for desert.

“So how far has the construction of your house gone?” grandfather asked and I saw dad scoffing at the Zachary while mom pursed her lips.

“It’s nearly done,” Zachary replied.

“Why do you even want to move out? We can all stay here,” dad said and mom nodded at his statement.

“Oh shut up already. It’s his wish. He wants to have some time with his wife,” grandfather spoke and I nearly spat the water hearing him but I managed to control myself and gulped down the water wiping away the drops from my lips.

“If I remember correctly, grandma told me that dad too moved out of the house with mom after the marriage,” Zachary said and I looked at mom to see her smiling a little looking lost in thoughts.

Recently, I have come to know that Zachary’s really father isn’t alive. After his death his twin brother, Gale married mom and took care of his brother’s family.

“Like grandpa said,” I felt a hand encircling me from my shoulder and pulling me.

I looked at Zachary who pulled me towards his side by my shoulder. His act confusing me as well as irritating me.

“I want to spend some quality time with my wife,” Zachary said looking directly at my eyes.

My heart skipped a beat hearing him. All of a sudden the thoughts of him with me alone in a house began surfacing my mind.

Why did he kiss me?

“Spent some quality time with my wife. My wife,” his words kept rotating before my eyes and the more strange thing was, even if I knew his words meant nothing but a mean to deceive others, but I didn’t know why the intensity in his eyes looked true to me. As if he wanted to tell me something, ask me something but he couldn’t because he doesn’t want to.

What do you want Zachary?

“Aww! Look at them,” I heard mom and both of us broke out of the staring contest and he removed his arm away from me and I sat properly on my seat dragging the chair away from his.

As soon as I did that I felt his hand on my chair below my thigh and the next moment I was jerked towards his direction with me gasping at the sudden action.

I glanced his way confused but soon glared at him when everyone laughed probably noticing what he just did.

“Jerk!” I whispered to him and noticed as he smirked slightly at me and looked the other way.

“There is a limit to facade everything. He doesn’t need to act every minute. No one is noticing nor cares” I huffed crossing my arms against my chest.

“This couple has a bright future,” grandpa said and as though I wanted to do nothing but to roll my eyes at his comment I gave out a forced smile at him and inwardly screamed “Yeah! Bright future in the sense with me stabbing him until death with an ice-cream stick if nobody serves me an ice-cream in next five minutes!”

“Ice-cream! Ice-cream! Ice-cream,” I screamed inwardly.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 28

Zachary Pov

“Well! Well! Who do we have here?” I smirked as I looked out of the stranded building’s window towards the target.

Willi chuckled a bit and loaded his rifle aiming it towards the target.

“Now do you believe me? That I’m on your team?” he asked pointing the gun downwards.

I smirked and though I nodded in positive, inwardly I still didn’t have a bit of trust on him, because it was what I was taught from the beginning by grandpa.

“Never trust a friend let alone an enemy.”

“Who would have ever imagined that this bastard will be digging his own grave by coming here. Romania” I said and watched intently from the sixth floor of the building towards where he was standing talking to his men.

Silly man, he doesn’t even have a single idea that his moves would have been watched and I was just waiting for a right opportunity. And the opportunity is here. I came to know that he has a small but important company here, i.e Romania. So, I did what I needed to do for him to come out of the bill.

I created circumstances in which he had to show up himself in order to save his company.

“Good work Willi,” I complimented.

Little did Mr. Nicholas Greer know that his steps are been watched.

My blood boiled when he laughed shaking his hand with a man. Oh, much I loathed the man.

“Give me that,” I stretched my hand asking for the rifle.

“You will shoot?” Willi asked.

I saw as the other men turned around to leave and Nicholas turned around walking towards his SUV.

“I said give me that!” I literally barked because I only had one chance to shoot and capture him, if I miss then perhaps I would never get my hands on him ever in my life. He is smart of all that I know about him.

Willi handed me the rifle and I used a silencer before walking nearer towards a window where I could get a clear vision of Nicholas. I opened the glass window and smirked seeing my target right before me.

Somehow, he stopped on his track and was looking at his phone.

Perfect timing!

I kept one of my feet on the window frame and positioned myself like a sniper for shooting.

“Are you going to kill him?” I heard Willi, his voice was little sad and unsure.

“Why? Are you not the same person who told me that you wanted revenge? So what happened now?” I asked looking back at Willi.

He sighed and looked down.

“If only he didn’t involve my family,” I heard him whisper sadly.

I rolled my eyes at his sudden emotions and looked back at the target who was now talking to someone on his phone.

“Say bye! bye!” I chuckled.

The silencer prevents from any sudden firing noise and my heart swelled seeing the man whom I loathed the most falling on the floor bloodied.

How many times are you going to be shot by me?

From my peripheral vision, I saw Willi scurrying towards my side to get a glimpse of what I just did.

“You didn’t kill him?” I heard his confused yet astonishment in his voice.

I clicked my tongue and watched as my men who were already surrounding him from far away in case we failed, for backup running towards his bloodied body.

“Nah! What’s the fun?” I asked and looked back straight in Willi’s eyes.

He watched me blinking several times and perhaps he understood what I meant because the next moment he smirked and looked back towards the scene.

The bullet pierced Nicholas’s shoulder. But as he is just a weak asshole, he passed out immediately.

I don’t even understand what Juliette saw and liked in him.

“Again Juliette!” I whispered and cursed rubbing my face with my palm, frustrated. This was the seventh or maybe tenth time in the day where I was thinking about Juliette.

“Did you say something boss?” asked Willi confused.

“No! Nothing. Go and help them,” I said pointing at the people who were trying to lift Nicholas’s bloodied body.

“Yess boss!” He said and scurried off hurriedly to help them.

As soon as he left I sighed and took my phone out still watching my men who were carrying Nicholas's body towards the car.

"Cosmina!" I said as soon as she answered my call.

"Yes sir," she replied.

"Where is Juliette?" I asked finally giving up on the urge to know about her. I have been ignoring the urge from the morning but finally, I ended up on calling Cosmina who was supposed to look after Juliette from a safe distance in our absence.

"Ma'am is with Mrs. Sullivan in her bedroom," she said and I sighed relieved that she is safe. Both of them are safe.

"Okay!" I pursed my lips.

"Let me talk to her," I said and rubbed my forehead because I never really intended to talk to Juliette. Why did those words even come out of my mouth? It's okay! Cosmina said she is with mom in her bedroom. That's all! Damn it!

"Yes, sir! Just a minute!" she said and I heard some voices of paper scrapping and the background noises. Meanwhile, I looked down out of the window to find Willi already reaching the spot and he was picking up the cell phone from the ground while Max looked inside Nicholas's SUV for any clue or anything.

Nicholas was already put inside the car and my men were getting ready to drive off to our place with Nicholas.

"Sir wants to talk to you ma'am," I heard Cosmina and I concentrated back on my phone.

"What me? But why?" I heard Juliette's voice. I rolled my eyes at her illogical questions.

Stupid! Idiot!

"What do you mean by why? He is husband. Of course, he will only want to talk to you," I heard mom but when I heard the word husband, something irked me and I didn't really like the feeling.

Before Juliette could answer the phone, I ended up the call and shoved the phone back into my pant pockets.

"Get a hold of yourself!" I scolded myself.

"You are being distracted by your target," I said to myself and turned walking towards the stairs which would lead me downwards towards the ground floor.

"Boss everything has been taken care off," Max said and I nodded.

"Let's leave," I informed and the boys nodded walking towards our car.

“Are you going to take him to your house basement cell?” Willi asked all of a sudden which stopped me in my tracks.

“That wouldn’t be a good idea,” he finished.

“You shut up! Don’t you dare question boss’s decision!” Max sneered up beside him.

“Enough you two!” I yelled.

“This is not the place and time for you two to fight. And no, I am not planning on taking him to my house where it could be dangerous for my family for he is dangerous,” I said looking at Nicholas’s unconscious body.

“Take him to our main cellar,” I ordered and the boys nodded before we got inside the car and drove off to the place where the asshole was to be kept.

I would have kept in our house cellar but that would have been dangerous. Not because as if he would cause any harm to anyone in my house, but I wanted him to stay away from Juliette.

Also, its not really the right time to let Juliette know about everything that has been going on. I have decided, that her father will be explaining everything to her but until that this brat needs to stay away from Juliette.

I scoffed seeing his unconscious self from the rearview mirror of the car.

What do you see in him, Juliette?

We drove to our destination with the SUV that Nicholas brought being driven by Max and he was tailing behind us. Willi was quietly driving the car while I sat on the passenger seat next to Willi, silently gazing out of the car’s tinted glass window.

“What are you planning to do with him?” the silence was broken by Willi asking me questions.

“You surely ask too many questions,” I said not even bothering to look his way. I heard him chuckling and I looked at him with a raised eyebrow.

“Nothing!” he shook his head.

“But I wanted to ask you a question!” he said and I gave him a sharp look.

“Didn’t you just ask one a few seconds ago?” I questioned.

“No! No! This one is last!” he said and I nodded pointing him to ask with my finger.

“Will I get my chance with him?” all of a sudden he looked cold and terrible. As if he wanted to kill someone almost immediately. His knuckles turned white at the rate in which he held the steering wheel.

I leaned against the door and rested my left cheek on my wrist supporting my hand from my elbow as I kept it on the window frame.

“Chance? On what? Talking?” I asked in a tone as if I was taunting him. I surely was taunting him.

“Talking? Huh!” he scoffed.

“It’s torturing the mo***f****r” he completed and his enthusiasm in torturing the asshole on our back seat made me chuckle deeply.

Hmm! Interesting! I guess this man is slowly winning my trust, day by day.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 29

Juliette Pov

“I am frustrated now!” I yelled pulling my hair and looked at myself through the bathroom’s mirror.

Why am I here? What am I doing here? What have I done to anyone to be treated like this?

I slammed my palm frustrated next to the sink.

What did I ever do to deserve all this?

Two days!

I have been thrown into his room and I have been locked up away from everyone all of a sudden since two days.

What did I even do?

It all started when I was with Cosmina in the kitchen. She was scribbling the items which were to brought on the notepad when I saw Zachary entering the kitchen with a stoic expression. I sat on the kitchen counter and watched as he marched up to me. He looked different some way.

He looked tensed.

Before I could get down from the counter and even ask him what has happened he chose to manhandle me by grabbing onto my arm and pulling me down onto my feet.

“Hey! What are you doing?” I cried because his firm grip on my arm was hurting me. It all happened all of a sudden that I couldn’t even understand what was going on and to where he was dragging me. I was in shock as well as scared. He wasn’t even talking and it made me feel that maybe I have done something to be treated like this.

Is he angry with me? But what did I do?

I was pushed into the room and I stumbled on my own feet, but I saved myself from tumbling down by holding onto the small wardrobe next to the room’s door.

“What are you doing?” I asked petrified.

“From now on you will be staying inside this room!” he said still standing in the entrance of the room near the door.

“W-what? But why?” I asked baffled at his statement.

“Don’t question me!” he yelled to which I visibly flinched.

I saw as he balled his fist and looked up before looking back at me.

“This is the last time I am warning you. Don’t ever question me again,” he said enunciating each word.

My hands trembled seeing his eyes.

What is wrong with him?

“This is my house and don’t forget who you are and from where and in what condition you have come here!” he said his face void of any expression.

“Zach-” he cut me off “Shut up!” and instantly I shut my mouth scared. He was intimidating me and to tell the truth I was scared to death.

“Stay in this room. You are prohibited from talking to anyone. If you do remember,” he took an intimidating step towards me which made me step a foot backward in an instant.

“Your near and dear ones has to pay the consequences,” his word held promise and I gulped the lump in my throat. The sides of my eyes stinging because of the tears that were pooling to flow down my cheeks but it was waiting for a blink. I lowered my gaze and let the tears shed down.

“You will be provided food but remember what I told you. Don’t try to act smart,” he warned for the last time.

“You are my little bird in my cage and it is in my hand to let you fly but if I don’t want that to happen then I am the type of person to choke the little bird right between my palm choking it till it breaths its last” he said and smirked when I looked up at him shocked.

I was never really afraid of Zachary but what he just told me made me scared to the point to where I just wanted to run away and hide from him and never ever show him my face. I know that he has done so many wrong things with me but I never really thought that he would ever hurt me. Somewhere deep down I used to think that maybe he isn’t what he is presenting before everyone especially before me. Maybe he is trying to save me. From that Nicholas.

But whatever I was thinking what just an exceptional. I knew at that moment that whatever I was feeling and thinking for him were false. He wasn’t what I thought and I wasn’t what he was forcefully trying to make me. A bird.

After saying those words he just shut the door on my face and locked the door with me inside. I banged on the door and even begged to let me out but my prayers were unheard and I remained inside the room sobbing. A man would come to the room and the door was only opened for him to give me my food. I tried to barge out but I was pushed back in by two bulky men back inside the living hell.

Since then it has been two days. Two days since I have gone out and I have been trapped as he calls me a bird trapped inside a cage guarded by snakes. My condition was worst even then that bird because in my case my life is not the only little pity one who would suffer, but my family’s life was also in threat because of me.

But I had enough now. I don't really care anymore now. It will be better if I die. I won't ever need to suffer any longer.

Splashing water few times in my face, I made up my mind that I just had enough.

If death is written on my face then nobody can change it. Why keep crying thinking that your life is in the hand of someone else. I will not cry anymore. I wouldn't cry anymore. And I will not fear my fate. Why would I? It is my life and I won't let anyone handle it. Nobody.

I took a bath and shampooed my hair and when I was done I went back inside the room and changed my clothes. My hair was wet and I let it dry naturally. I looked at the food that was on the plate, untouched.

I took the plate and sat on the couch.

"You will be needing energy," I muttered to myself looking at the food.

After finishing my food, I went to the window and opened it. I huffed at the sight of people guarding down my window and the whole house.

Why is this tight security?

Who is that person who is causing all this to be done?

Is he more powerful than Zachary?

Through all those people my eyes glanced towards the gate where I saw a black sleek car pulling over.

Zachary's car!

The door of the opened and came out Zachary himself wearing his black suit with black shades. From the other side, it was Cosmina who came out holding a mini laptop in her hand. She came to the side where Zachary was standing and I saw as he ordered her something and she nodded before walking ahead towards the house.

Zachary pulled his suit to himself and I saw as he leaned on his car and took out a cigarette from his pant pocket and using a lighter he lighted the cigarette and began smoking it. I scowled at his action. Doesn't he know that smoking cigarette is injurious to health?

He doesn't even have one single good habit within him. Why am I even expecting a good habit from him?

I watched as he took out his phone and began scrolling it while smoking the cigarette from the other hand.

All of a sudden I had a craving.

I wanted to walk up to him and smack his face tightly.

As if he heard my intentions or something he gazed up at me and looked directly into my eyes. He took the cigarette up to his mouth and blew out a puff of smoke out of his mouth. I frowned at him and decided to get back inside away from his sight.

It was what he wants right? Keeping me away from his sight. If he can't bear the sight of me then why should I even show him my face?

I went back to the couch and sat on it idly playing with a loose strand of my wet hair. It's not that I could do anything trapped inside a room. My trains of thoughts came to halt when I heard sounds coming from the door and the door of the room opened revealing Zachary himself.

"Come out," he said and like a dog, I stood up and followed him out of the room. I followed him till the living room and I saw everyone already present in the living room. There they were, Cosmina, mom, and Gale, grandfather, and Willi too.

"What happened? Is everything alright between you two? Why were we not allowed to meet Juliette and why was she locked up in her room?" asked mom.

So she had no about everything that has been going on?

"Yes! I want to know. Why was my grand-daughter-in-law locked up like that? I want answers Udolf" grandfather asked Zachary.

All Zachary did was, he shoved his hands into his pant pockets and pursed his lips.

"Nothing! Everything is fine between us," he said lying looking back to my face. I clenched my jaws and gave out a forced smile to the family.

"Do you think we are stupid Zachary?" Gale asked pointing an accusing finger towards Zachary.

"Nobody locks his own wife like that. Away from everyone without any reason!" he continued and I looked back at Zachary to find him looking at Gale with a stoic expression.

"Forget it! I will ask Juliette," he further added irritated by Zachary's expression.

"Juliette is everything okay?" he asked to me.

I was about to open my mouth when Zachary interrupted me by saying "I already told you! Everything is okay!" he said gritting his teeth at Gale.

"Is your name Juliette? I am asking to her and she is the one who will answer. Do you understand?" Gale glared at Zachary while I stood there shaking in anger for Zachary has tested my patience too much. I was beyond angry upon him now.

"Yo-" I cut Zachary.

"No! Nothing is okay between us," I said all of a sudden leaving no room for Zachary for interfering.

He glared at me and warned me through his eyes not to do anything stupid.

But I didn't care.

"What?" mom whispered.

"Truly speaking I also don't have any idea why all of a sudden I was locked inside the room like that away from everyone" I further added which caused Zachary seething in anger.

"And I am angry. Angry upon Zachary for not even letting me know and treating me like that," I said as calmly as I could but I knew that the bridge of my patience was breaking second by second and I would lose it any second.

"But!" I added when I saw Zachary about to speak.

"Everything can be normal if he pays for what he did," I said and saw as Zachary gave me a confused look.

"Look at him seething in anger" I chuckled sarcastically and further added "I guess his anger has raised his body temperature. You need to cool down before you get your blood pressure high!" I said and looked around when I spotted the jug of water.

"Wait a minute!" I said and walked to the table where the jug full of water was kept.

I took it and came back to my previous place.

"Have it! It will," I paused and heard the gasps of everyone present in the room when I practically poured the water out on Zachary's face.

"Cool you down!" I said once the jug was now empty.

He stood there in shock for a minute and then he raised his hand and touched his face as if not believing that I just splashed water on his face before everyone humiliating him. He wiped his face using his palm and then his facial expressions contoured the angry ones and angrily he got rid of his now wet dripping suit and he began to flip it in air.

I sighed and turned around and kept the now empty jug on the table beside the sofa.

"Oh my!" mom said out of shock.

"Why you!" he seemed clearly miffed with the scenario.

And as I have already predicted, I was grabbed by my arm and I was dragged back towards the room with him muttering something in annoyance.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 30

Juliette Pov

“How dare you?” he snarled at me pushing me against the wall.

I just wrapped my arms across my chest and stared at me while he raked his hand through his wet hair.

“How dare you humiliate me? I get it you didn’t get a thing that I had warned you earlier” he punched the wall from the side of my face which made me flinch a little.

Don’t be scared, Juliette! Don’t let him dominate you.

“Just a flick! Just in a flick of my fingers, I will destroy everything. Do you get it? I can destroy everyone you love and your family” he rage was clear from his voice.

“Oh really?” I said and for the first time I raised my hands and in one go I pushed him hard and away from me.

He stumbled backward a little with a shocked expression. Never had he ever thought I would ever fight back.

“What more will you destroy? Hu?” I yelled.

“You have destroyed everything already!”

“What more is left?” I yelled on his face.

“Shut up!” he growled and held my arms and he jerked me a little in anger hurting me a little. I winced when he pushed me hard on the wall enraged.

“Don’t raise your voice on me!” he threatened.

“Or what?” I pushed on his chest testing his patience.

“Or..” he came dangerously closer to my face for which I had to look towards the side avoiding the contact.

“You know Jace,” he said and I looked back at him with wide eyes.

“Your beloved brother Jace Swanson,” he whispered.

“He is opting for medicines right?”

“How will be it if your brother gets kidnapped directly from his way back home?” he threatened to which I gasped.

“Yes! I do know everything about your family. What are their names, what they do and want? Everything” he tightened his hold on my arms jerking me to him.

“You wouldn’t!” I gritted out.

“Oh believe me! I can and after he is kidnapped I’ll make sure that he gets the best treatment for,” he smirked, “he is my wife’s only brother after all.”

“Yo- You are a monster” I cried out.

“Much more than that,” he smirked.

“Get away from me!” I pushed hard on his chest and he did move away running his hand through his damp hair.

“Do you think me as some average thief or gangster?” he asked.

I stared at him while he folded his sleeves up.

“Don’t take me for granted Juliette. I do what I say,” he said and crossed his arms across his chest.

“For instance. This is your-” I cut him off.

“And what makes you think that you can suppress me every time? I am not your dog,” I retorted back.

“Do you think you can just lock me inside a room for two days like some dog? You will say stand up and I will just follow your commands as if I am some kind of dog?” my voice raised.

“For god sake I am human and I have some limit and you are crossing it every time you do something like this. You are a despicable man!” I told him by a pointing a finger at him.

“Despicable?” he chuckled darkly.

“Oh so I am despicable?” he said and in a moment he was before me with my hands up pressed on the wall as he caged me with his body sandwiching me between the wall and his body.

“I see this little bird has grown its wings hu?” he jerked up when I tried to push him away.

“Let me go!” I snapped.

“So you find me despicable hu? What about that mutt?” I stopped wiggling and eyed him up with confusion.

“What is he?” he asked further.

“Who?” I asked in confusion.

“That lover of yours” he answered my question.

“If I’m despicable than what is he hu?” his question angered me.

“He is a lot better than you. Do you understand? Don’t pull him into this. At least he knows how to treat a woman and here look at you. What are you? Is this the way you treat a woman? Every woman? He is a lot better than you. Better than you in every field!” I snapped at him and felt my eyes stinging from the unshed tears thinking about Emmett. Emmett would have never treated me like this.

“Don’t ever compare me to that mutt!” Zachary growled on my face.

“Mutt? Don’t you dare call him that? You are the one to be holding such adjective not him. Do you understand? He is way much better than you,” I yelled on his face.

“Better? Because he bedded you?” Zachary’s question made me stop in shock.

“Wh-What?” I whispered.

“Is that what you are talking about? Are you comparing me with him because he gave you pleasure in bed and I never? Is that it?” he asked and chuckled darkly seeing my expression.

“Is that what you want? Sex?” he pushed me further even more to the wall.

“Why don’t you test me? Test me if I could make you scream even more than him. You are pissed, right? Pissed that I never looked up towards you in that way? Nor ever approached you or even glanced your way? Is this what pisses you off and you take his side more than me? Then why don’t you let me change the fact? I will show you how better sex partner I can be” he said which made my heart beat rise, not in a good way.

“Is that what you want?” he questioned.

“Is that how low you think of me?” I questioned not believing what he just said.

“Low? Isn’t that the truth? Bittersweet truth hu?” he countered.

This angered me even more. Is this how low he thinks of me. Do I look like a slut to him? I know that we don’t know each other nor do we have any serious relationship rather than unknown enmity but I used to think that he does have a little maybe a tiny bit of respect for me, for which he never abused me in any kind of physical way because I used to think that maybe, just maybe.

A lone tear escaped my eyes and I mustered up all the anger that I have inside me towards him. In a swift motion, I freed my hands and a loud sharp noise was heard in the room. It was me slapping him right on his face.

His face turned the other side when I slapped him and I tried to control my breathing because of the anger that I felt towards him. How dare he insult me?

His face masked pure shock but all of a sudden he took his revolver from his back and pulled the slide of it before pointing it directly at my head.

“How dare you?” he growled.

His eyes were devoid of any emotions and his face held pure hatred and rage for me. I was sure that my face held the same thing towards him too. I didn’t even flinch when he aimed the gun at my head. I was no longer afraid of death.

He hurt my dignity, my self-respect. How dare he?

“What are you waiting for?” I asked as I held the front of the gun.

“Pull the trigger and end this all,” I said in a low voice not wanting to express my feelings.

“You have already killed me. This won’t kill me,” I said and let go of the gun.

“C’mon! Shoot!” I said encouragingly.

Tears shredded down my face. I was hurt badly. He hurt my sentiments and emotions. It was as if he slapped my dignity. He ruined my image.

He breathed heavily as he stood there pointing the revolver on my forehead but I saw as his eyes flickered some emotions within them when he saw my tears.

I was expecting that today it was my last day on this earth. But surprisingly, I witnessed as he lowered the gun down still looking at my face.

“Why are you like this?” he whispered but I heard it.

I leaned my head against the wall as I looked directly into his eyes.

“Ask yourself!” I muttered answering his question.

His face contorted back into anger and the revolver fell to the ground from his hand as he took a step forward again holding me by my arms.

“Why are like this?” he yelled on my face jerking me a little.

“Let me go!” I screamed trying to free my hands from his.

I said leave me” I shouted as I yanked my hand back from his hold.

“Why are you behaving like this?” He hissed at me as he took hold of my arms and pushed me against the wall.

“I don’t want to do anything with you. You are a murderer and I can never forget what you did to him” I cried as I tried to free myself.

“First of all, you are my wife and next time I am not going to tolerate any such activity from you. Do you understand?” He spoke through gritted teeth.

I glared at him and pushed his chest hard using all my force and he stumbles back shocked.

“I told you I don’t want anything to do with you,” I told him icily while the head of Mafia and the billionaire who was my husband glared at me.

He stood there and stared at me for some minute. I was expecting for him to lash out again at me or maybe something which would hurt me in any way but he surprised me by bending down and picking up his gun.

He shoved it back on his back and walked out of the room taking long strides as he banged the door shut behind him. I flinched at the impact of the door and let my tears fall down as I slid down against the wall to the ground hugging my knees and crying my eyes out for he tried to question to my dignity.

I will never forgive him for this.

For the words he spoke today was a signal of a new fight between us for which I hate him for eternity.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 31

Willi Pov

“I should have known,” snarled Nicholas while I smirked at his bloodied condition.

“You know what? You are seriously an ungrateful bastard! Just count how many times had I saved you. It will be countless but here you are being ungrateful and snarling at your savior. Without me you are nothing! If it wasn’t for me, you would have been dead a long time ago but here you are handcuffed to the bed while I wrap new bandage om your body. Geez! I wish I could ever do anything else rather than saving your sorry ass every day and night.”

“Watch your mouth!” he sneered which irritated me. I applied too much pressure on his shoulder where Zachary’s bullet hit him previously and as the wound was still raw he winced in pain and glared at me which earned him a sly grin from my side.

“I should have known. You traitor!” he said and coughed a little.

I laughed a little and tied the bandage before getting off the stool and walking towards the sink.

“As I have said before, ungrateful bastard!” I said and washed my hands thoroughly using the antiseptic handwash.

“You are going to be dead soon. Wait! till my dad finds out about this,” he said which made me chuckle.

“Says the one who is in the bed of death” I commented and saw as he balled his fists in anger.

After we got him captured, boss ordered us to take him to our main gang house where he was to be treated for his wounds, because the boss wanted him alive much to my dismay. It would be so easy if Zachary killed him already or better let me kill him.

“You will have to pay for this!” he sneered.

“We will see that,” I heard Zachary and I turned around to see him walking into the room with Seth and another guy after him holding a rifle.

“You bastard!” Nicholas clutched onto the handcuffs and tried to pull it in anger.

“Enjoying?” Zachary smirked at him seeing his failing efforts. He walked to the stool where I was sitting previously and sat on it stretching his legs crossed over each other on the bed right beside Nicholas’s torso. With just a flick of his finger, he signaled me, and the other two to get out of the room.

Though I wanted to stay and watch the drama, I chose not to anger him and momentarily I walked out of the room closing the door behind me.

“He is going to die today!” Seth said to the other guy.

“I don’t think so,” he remarked.

“What makes you think that?” Seth asked.

“Because if the boss wanted him dead he could have killed him already. Why has he not killed him already?” the other guy questioned and that made me wonder too.

Why doesn’t he just kill him?

“What do you think?” Seth asked me and I looked up at him as he stood five more inches taller than me.

“I don’t know!” I shrugged and both of them looked at each other.

“What?” I asked confused because of there questioning looks.

“We have heard that the man is your previous boss,” Seth said and I pursed my lips and shoved my hands into my pant pockets.

“Yes. So?” I asked.

“So?” he repeated me and chuckled.

“Your previous boss may get killed by your current boss. Do you not feel anything for him?” he asked signaling towards the door where both of my ‘boss’ were supposedly having a private meeting.

“Yes. I do feel for him” I said casually and got my hand out of my pocket to touch the ring attached to my chain on my neck.

“And what is that?” the other guy asked.

“Pity and hatred,” I said clutching the ring tightly.

Both of them again looked at each other while the other guy shrugged to Seth when Seth whispered to him something.

Sera was my life. I had loved only one person in my total life and that was Sera. We were married for only six months when she died. I can never forget that day.

I was in my house and for the first time ever. I was fed up with my life. Every day, when I was away I would worry about Sera living alone in the house. Because for my profession, one would never know what would happen anytime and anywhere.

I chose to quit my job and live a normal life with Sera. But this didn’t go well with Nicholas he threatened me, warned me that if I dared to quit then he would ruin my life forever. Because I was his only trustworthy man. He depended his life on me. But he didn’t even understand that I am not a machine. I too have a life.

And when I called it quits, this angered Nicholas to the extent where he was even ready to kill me. But surprisingly, he let me go. I thought everything was over now. Now I will be living my life happily with my wife forever. But that night, when I was waiting for Sera all of a sudden I got a phone call from the police and I was informed that Sera had an accident on the highway.

I felt as if I had been stabbed several times in my chest. I couldn't belief what I was hearing. Stumbling across the room, grabbing my coat I ran grabbing my car keys from the table.

The whole way I was crying thinking about her. I prayed to god for her safety.

"Please be okay. Please God!"

But when I reached there the sight before me, broke my heart. People were crowding the place and cops were standing doing there work of keeping the crowd away from the spot. But what got my attention was the car that was on the side of the road crashed brutally against another red car. I got out of my car and slowly walked towards the spot pushing past the crowd. All the while, my heart pounded against my chest. Anxiety building up within me.

I wished to god that let Sera be alright. But all my prayers went in vain when I saw a feminine hand laced with blood, out of the car's door. It was Sera.

She was already dead when I reached there. My life was ruined. Everything was gone for forever. Sera was never returning back. She left me forever.

It was hard for me to cope up with her death. But soon I came to know that it wasn't just an accident. It was a well-planned crime and it was planned none other but Nicholas. I found out that the Nicholas was behind all this. He planned Sera's accident.

So, I returned back to my profession.

"Good choice!" he had told me when I was back.

But he never knew that I was back for revenge not for loyalty. He had taken my life away from me and in return, I would do the same with him. I had to play my cards patiently and cleverly. Day by day I proved him my loyalty and saved him many times only for the moment where I could kill him by myself. And the moment came when he assigned me to get into Zachary's area.

He killed my love. I will kill him.

That's my promise to you Sera.

Zachary has been not in control from these last two days. He would come here and torture Nicholas and then leave him alone. I wonder what is wrong with him.

He even destroyed his own office room in anger.

It all started that day. We were standing in the hall when all of a sudden the door of the room where Nicholas was kept tied down to the bed banged open and came out Zachary in rage. He looked different.

I have always seen him calculative, collective and well composed but never ever in this psychic. He looked mad. He took the vase from the table and threw it on the wall destroying it.

“Boss!” Seth tried to stop him but he was pushed away by an angry as bull Zachary.

“Don’t forget your position. Don’t touch me” he enunciated each word in pure hatred which made Seth visibly flinch.

I looked astonished at his behavior.

“What is wrong with him?”

“Clean all this!” he commanded an walked out of the room.

“What just happened to him?” I asked.

“He looks enraged by something,” Seth said as he picked up the pieces of the vase from the floor.

“I think that Nicholas told him something which has miffed him,” Seth said.

I looked back at the way where Zachary just left. Never seen him this out of control. He is clearly miffed with something.

“What was that?” Seth and I both got alerted when we heard gun shots from within the house.

“That way!” Seth said and ran out of the room taking his own gun out from his belt.

We ran to the front of the house and that is where we saw a man lying on the grassy ground dead.

Zachary shot him.

He was one of our men.

He shot his own man? Is he like Nicholas too?

“Boss!” Seth stammered.

Zachary pointed his gun up towards the other guy that was standing next to the dead body. He was too one of our men.

“Boss! Wha-” Seth was cut off when Zachary spoke.

“So you were the one. Traitor! Informing everything about us to Nicholas and his dad huh?” Zachary’s words were laced with venom.

“Austin?” Seth asked all shocked.

“I- I am s-sorry” Austin trembled in fear.

“Sorry? Sorry?” Zachary rolled the gun between his finger and laughed out loud throwing his head backward.

“This word. Sorry. I hate it. I really it” and he pointed the gun back on Austin’s head.

“Please forgive m-”

The birds flew away flocking their feathers furiously when the gunshot was heard. Austin’s body fell limp on the ground while Zachary stood their emotionless with no trace of regret on his face. Merciless.

“I don’t want even a trace of their filthy blood in my place. Clean it up!” he said and walked towards the car wiping his hand on his coat’s sleeve.

“Umm!” Seth looked down.

Killing our own mates from within our group is not a new site for us. But as long as I have been here I have come to know that Zachary doesn’t trust anyone. No even his own family.

He is even more merciless than Nicholas. In truth, Nicholas is a coward. He would always hide behind me or his men for safety. He just knows how to torture and how to kill someone.

But Zachary. He is independent. He works and speaks of his own. He doesn’t trust any one nor does his show mercy to any one. The complete opposite of Nicholas.

I wonder what has gotten him for his he has lost his calmness all of a sudden.

A car stopped right near the gate and came out Max. He looked at us and then hurried to us.

“What the fuck?” Max cursed seeing Austin and the other guy.

“Don’t swear!” I hissed and he rolled his eyes at me.

“Boss did it. They were traitors!” Seth told him.

“Austin? No way!” Max shook his head and looked down at his body sorrowful.

“Let’s get them out of here before boss returns,” I said and both of them nodded.

From my peripheral vision, I saw a figure running towards the house from the car but I chose to ignore thinking it might be a man of Zachary within the territory.

“Oh man!” Max cried out throwing his arms in the air.

After we were done, we walked inside the house only to be stopped by Zachary himself.

“All finished?” he asked again looking calm and collective.

“Yes, boss!” Seth said when all of a sudden we heard a feminine scream.

Zachary composed himself and we all ran towards the room where we heard the scream.

“A lady? Here?” Max asked.

The voice came from Nicholas’s room.

Zachary was the first to get there. But as soon as he opened the door. He froze seeing the woman before him.

It was Mrs. Sullivan. His wife in Nicholas’s room.

She was on the ground while Nicholas stood there near the bed. Somehow, he had managed to untie himself.

“Y-You are N-Nicholas?” was what Juliette cried out stammering seeing Nicholas before him.

I looked back at Zachary. His palms were balled into tight fists while he clenched and unclenched his jaw. His eyes filled with anger. But his anger was directed towards Nicholas. He looked pissed and ready to kill when Nicholas crunched down on the ground before Juliette.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 32

Juliette Pov

“I am going to get out of here” I chanted the words like a mantra pacing around my room dressed in a black button-up shirt and black jeans. I have been chanting the words from the moment Zachary left the room.

Surprisingly, mom was allowed to meet me and she was disheartened to know how Zachary treated me. She even convinced me that she will talk to Zachary and let me out of the room but then when she came for the second time I knew that Zachary has clearly denied his own mother in the regards of letting me out of the room.

I am not his pet that he will just lock me inside a room just like that.

“You are my little bird.”

His words angered me even more. The fact that looking at my state right now, it is true that certainly I’m his bird and he surely has locked me inside his cage.

“No!” I held my head and walked to the window.

“I need to get out of here!”

I looked outside of the window to find guards guarding the perimeter.

“No way I could ever get out without being noticed!” I muttered to myself.

“I need a plan!” I thought and closed the window.

First of all, I need to call my family. It’s not that I never tried. I tried every time I got a phone secretly from the maids or Cosmina but every time it was the same thing.

The number doesn’t exist!

What in the world is wrong with every phone number I know? All of a sudden number doesn’t exist?

I sighed and began to think about the ways to tackle those guards behind my room’s door.

“Think! Think!” I held my hair in frustration.

I was pacing around without even looking where I was going and the next moment I hit my foot hard on the corner of the table. I yelped and limped clutching the feet and I knelt down on the floor crying seeing the blood oozing out from the edge of my nail.

The door swung open and from the corner of my teary eyes, I saw as a man holding came inside and walked up to my side.

“Te simți bine Doamnă?” (Are you alright Ma’am?) he said.

“What?” I asked not understanding what he was speaking.

“Te simți bine Doamnă?” he said again.

I made up a face while rubbing the sore area of my feet. “What?” I asked again but this time irritated.

“Sânge?” (Blood?) he muttered looking down at my feet.

“Hu?” I asked and he rubbed his forehead all of a sudden looking frightened.

“Oh! Nu” (No) he muttered.

“Boss este de gând să mă omoare” (Boss is going to kill me) he said and before I could get even more frustrated and kick his ass he turned around and left. Leaving the door open.

“Door is open!” I muttered. Then the recognition hit me.

“Door is open!” I yelled but soon clamped my hand on my mouth stopping myself from shouting.

I got up and limped towards the dressing table where I last saw an alphabet band-aid. I took it out with the letter X on it and applied it on my now swollen feet.

I slide my feet inside my sneaker and limped towards the door. Carefully I sneaked out of the room. I saw the guard talking on his phone in his language. Before he could notice me, slowly I closed the room’s door so that he will think I am inside and then tiptoed behind his back towards the stairs.

I saw some guards walking up and I squealed a little before turning around and hiding under a table nearby. I clamped my hands on my mouth and saw as they passed by me. Took a sigh of relief for not getting spotted.

Slowly and cautiously, I walked down the stairs and towards the main hall. I saw grandfather, mom, and dad sitting in the lounge talking to each other. They didn’t really look happy.

“I will talk to Udolf about this. Something seems off by the way he treats his wife” grandfather spoke to which dad scoffed and crossed his arms across his chest.

“I told you from the beginning. Nobody really cared. I told you something is really fishy. He and in love? Please!” Dad said to which mom looked at him and glared.

“Stop judging my son!” she hissed.

“He is my son too!” Dad said while grandfather heaved a sigh and got up to get a drink from the mini bar.

“So they really don’t have any idea about my relation with Zachary,” I thought and quietly passed the door without getting noticed.

I was going to be freed today. I am keen on escaping this place today.

I walked towards the back gradually looking here and there for any person.

When I reached the door, I was just going to open it but stopped when I saw shadows of people standing behind the door.

“Eee!” I clicked my tongue and slowly backed off a little.

Please don’t open the door!

God help me!

Please! Please! Please!

If they opened the door I would be busted. There was no way I could hide anywhere from where I was standing.

“I heard that Nicholas has been caught by the boss!” I was just ready to turn around and run but stopped when I heard this.

Hearing about the Nicholas guy made me have goosebumps all over my body. I didn’t really know that person yet that person is trying to kill me. I don’t even know the reason why he wants to see me dead.

Instantly, I took a step further and overheard their conversation.

“Yes! Our boss is really amazing. He caught him with ease” the other one spoke.

“That man has really got himself in trouble. I don’t think the boss is going to let him leave this easily after all Nicholas killed his sister” the man said and I clamped my hands over my mouth from letting the gasp escape my mouth.

Nicholas killed his sister?

Is that why he was so keen on finding him?

But what did I do? Why am I involved in all this?

“Yeah! Boss is coming back. Let’s be at the gate” the man spoke and the other hummed in response. I waited until I could no longer hear any voice from outside or any presence.

Slowly, I turned the knob and peep a little before opening the door. Took a sigh of relief finding no one nearby. I looked back and slowly closed the door not making any sound.

I walked cautiously towards the front gate. As long as I have stayed here I have come to know that there was only one door to get out of the mansion. And it was the front gate. But the thing was how was I suppose to get out of here without getting noticed.

I stopped and hid behind a tree once I reached near the front side. I saw a lot of guards guarding the area.

“Damn!” I cursed and hid a little when saw a guard looking my way.

I waited for some minutes but it was of no use. Nobody was leaving the space nor anyone doing anything so that I could use the moment as my time to get out.

I saw as the front gates opened a sleek car entered and pulled over. My heart beat raised thinking about Zachary. As soon as the door opened I was ready to run back in towards the room literally scared of Zachary might do if he found out I was missing.

But exhaled out air when saw Max coming out of the car.

He got out of the car and walked towards the house. All of a sudden my eyes fell on my room’s window. There I saw the guard from before standing and looking everywhere.

“Shoot! he found out that I was missing” I bit down on my lips and waited when he went away. I need to get out right now else I will be in trouble. I looked around frantically and the only option I saw was the car’s hood. It was open. The car was really close to me. Few steps away. If I made a run I would definitely reach there.

So I counted to three and made a run with closed eyes. As stupid as I looked but I was scared. Scared shitless!

I opened my eyes when I reached closer and in a flash, I opened the hood and got it closing it after me. I made sure not to lock it else I couldn’t get away.

All of a sudden I felt the car moving and I clamped my hands over my mouth trying not to squeak or utter any words out of my mouth.

“Doamnă!” I heard people but soon the voice faded but I could feel the vehicle still moving.

Am I out of the house?

I shifted in an odd position feeling my back aching because of the small place. But somehow managed to adjust me in that enclosed place.

Hours later, when I was sure I could no longer feel my back the car stopped making me hit my head hard on the back of the seat.

“Ah!” I uttered.

I heard the door of the car opening and slamming shut.

I took that the chance to open the hood to look out.

“Where am I?” I thought.

I got out of the car and looked around. The place was surrounded by trees and there was a house which looked like a warehouse. I turned around and saw some people walking towards me.

I narrowed my eyes and looked at the familiar faces.

“Oh my god! They are Zachary’s men!” I said pulling my hair and made up a run towards the house.

Great! Back to Zachary.

His men everywhere I go.

Leave me alone already!

As soon as I made to the door, I saw another group of men walking and I hid behind the door.

“Did you hear what boss did to Nicholas?” one of them talked.

“Yeah!”

“Did you tie him back?”

“Yeah, I did. Boss ordered me to shift to another room after he wakes up.”

Wait! Nicholas? He is here?

Oh my god!

I waited for them to pass and when they did I came out of my hiding place and looked towards the stair. I heard that Nicholas is here. So he is really has been captured by Zachary?

“Why does that man after my life?” I thought and balled my fists.

Should I go and look for him?

I heard he has been tied. He can’t harm me. Should I ask what I have done?

Nonsense! It’s dangerous! Just mind your own business and get out of here.

My subconscious was nagging me continuously to get out the place.

So I turned around and was ready to leave the place but all of a sudden stopped.

“If today I get out of here and get myself free then it doesn’t mean that this person and Zachary won’t stop searching for me. If he has been caught there must be a reason. He killed Zachary’s sister. Zachary wants to kill him and he wants to kill me” I spoke to myself and turned around back towards the stair.

I might take the risk. I have come so far and yet I am trying to take away from the truth. At least I can look at his face to know how he looks.

Slowly, I made up my way towards the stair. I looked back if anyone was coming. Finding no one I walked further and as the room got nearer I found my heart beating vigorously against my chest in fear. I gulped down the lump that formed in my throat and stopped just before the door.

"C'mon Juliette. Just get a glimpse of his face!" I motivated myself and in the count of three turned the knob.

When I did. I saw a man standing with his back facing me. He was undoing the rope from his hands and he shook his head.

"Is he Nicholas!" I thought.

I thought he has been tied! Has he got himself free? Oh my god! Run Juliette!

"I am going to kill you Zachary Udolf Sullivan!" he spoke angrily and I stood paralyzed to the position.

That voice!

Memories of Emmett flooded back into my mind and I began to think about the impossibilities hearing that voice. My hands began to tremble and I didn't even realize when I took a step further inside the room towards the man.

"You did a great mistake. I am Nicholas Greer and this time you are going to die for sure!" he spoke and I felt as the tears flooded down my cheek.

As I took a step further the wooden floor under me squeaked and as if alerted he took the stool from the bedside and turned around to hit me. A loud scream escaped my mouth and I screamed numerous times not because he was going to hit me or something. But it was his face.

It was Emmett.

My Emmett.

I screamed in horror seeing him there after a long time. He is alive and the worst thing that I discovered was....

"Ju-Juliette" he uttered my name once he recognized my face and he lowered the stool down and kept it on the ground.

He took a step towards me but I showed him a finger warning him to stop.

I cried my eyes out but not because of happiness. If it would have been some other day I would have thanked the god and cried happy tears because the person I loved was alive and healthy before me. But today, I felt devastated. Because not only I got to know that he is alive but found out a shocking yet ugly truth about him.

I felt my legs wobbling and I felt on my knees crying and sobbing hard.

"Y-You are N-Nicholas?" I stammered feeling as if the ground slipped from under my feet.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 33

Juliette Pov

I couldn't even believe what life has for me. The impossibilities are happening to me. I cursed myself for having a fate like this. What did I ever do to have a fate like this?

"Jul-Juliette" the person whom I thought was dead, whom I loved the most in this world whom I thought was the only one who loved me is the person who broke my heart shattering it into pieces for he was the biggest lie of my life.

"Juliette" I felt him grabbing me from my arms while I sobbed and cried sitting on the floor.

He pulled me up and I stood on my feet but I could feel my legs wobbling.

What is going on with me?

"Juliette baby" he tried to touch my cheek but I slapped his hands away and glared at him.

Through my watery eyes, I managed to glare at him. My eyes were open now. I could see the truth now. But only the half of the truth. I need to hear his side of the story too. I can't just keep on crying not knowing what to do. I have been kept in the darkness. And now, I want to be free. I want to know everything. Every single little thing that my eyes have missed. I could hear people laughing at me. Sounds of people laughing at me echoed in my ear and I looked around terrified thinking who are they. Nobody was around but the sounds of laughter didn't stop. They were mocking me for having a fate like this. For being betrayed by the only one whom I believed and trusted the most.

"Stop!" the words formed in my mouth as I put my palms on my ear not able to bear people taunting me.

"Juliette?" Emmett looked confused as he took a step closer to me.

"Stop right there!" all of a sudden the sounds were gone and I found myself standing in a quiet room with Emmett facing me looking at me little nervous.

"Who are you?" I questioned looking straight into his eyes.

"Wh- What are you talking about? Juliette, I am Emmett. Your Emmett" he took another step closer but I showed him a finger warning him to stop.

"Who are you?" I asked again. I wanted to hear it. I wanted to hear it from his mouth. Deep down, I was still hoping that whatever I thought and heard was false. Let him be the Emmett whom I loved.

"Juliette, what is wrong with you?" he asked but he looked unhappy now.

“Who are you?” I repeated the same question determinedly wanting to know the answer. I wouldn’t budge until he answered my question.

He looked into my eyes and then pursed his lips.

“Fine! I will answer. I don’t understand what is wrong with you. Why are you even questioning me like this all of a sudden but I will answer you” he said as he kept his hands on his hips.

“I am Emmett Renfred,” he said and I balled my fists in anger.

Again lying!

“Who are you?” I asked again. I decided I will continue to ask the same question until he didn’t give me the correct answer to it.

“Juliette! are you kidding me? What is wrong with you? Why are asking me who I am? What do mean by that? I am Emmett! Your Emmett! Stop asking me the same question again and again. I am Emmett!” he said as he ran a hand through his messy hair and sighed looking at me.

I couldn’t believe it. He was again lying on my face. How did I not catch him lying to me when I was with him? How was I so blinded by his love that I couldn’t even see his true face?

“Who are you?” I asked again.

“Are you kidding me? What’s wrong with you?” Stop asking me that question again and again” he looked frustrated now and I could see the anger in his eyes. I knew he had an impatience personality and I knew if I kept nagging me he would burst out any second. If this time, I was nervous because he wasn’t the Emmett that I knew. If he was really Nicholas who I have heard is the one is trying to kill me then he would definitely try to hurt me anytime if I don’t remain alerted.

“You are Emmett?” I questioned as a smile formed on my lips.

“Yes! Yes! I’m Emmett” all of a sudden the tension in his face faded away and he looked at me with hope and something else which I quite couldn’t put my fingers on.

“Then why are you being so restless? Why are your hands trembling?” I asked smiling as I looked at his trembling hands. I noticed his hands trembling when he ran his hand through his hair. His hands always trembled whenever he lied or he was in tension.

“Tell me,” I said sarcastically at him.

He looked down to his still trembling hands and I could see him gulping.

“Oh! There are trembling because I h-have been here for so long and that Zachary. Yes, that Zachary has done so many horrible things to me Juliette” he came forward and held me by my arms.

“Juliette he is not a good guy. He wants to kill me. He wants to hurt you too. Juliette” he took my hand into his “Juliette help me! get me out of here. I know what he has done to you. Trust me!” he put one of his hand on my cheek “I still love you. Help me to get out of here” he said.

“I asked you a question,” I said as I removed his hand from mine.

“Are you serious?” he snapped.

“I am saying that I am in a problem and help me get me out of here and all you are doing is repeating the same fucking question!” he snapped at me which made me take a step back from him.

He noticed this and he sighed closing his eyes.

“Juliette!” He came forward and tried to hug me but I put a hand between us stopping him from moving any closer.

“You want to kill me?” I could feel my eyes stinging.

“Wh-What! No! How could you ever think that way? I woul-” I stopped him in the middle.

“Who are you?” I asked enunciating each word. This time I was losing my patience.

“Agai-” the sound of the slap echoed in the room as his face turned the other side while my palm stung due to the impact of the slap.

“Did you just slap me?” he looked up at me as he touched his face not believing what I just did.

It was the first time ever that I raised my hands to him. I couldn’t help it. He was keeping on ignoring my questions. All he cared was being freed. Getting out of here. But what me? Did he ever ask how was I in all these days? How was I suffering thinking that he died?

“How dare you?” his face contoured the one of an angry beast as he lunged at me and grabbed me by my hair.

“Aaah!” a sob left my mouth. I was too shocked to move away. Is this the same Emmett whom I loved?

“You little piece of shit! Have you the audacity to raise a hand on me? Hu?” he grabbed another fistful of my hair and pulled it roughly arching my neck in an odd position which brought tears to my eyes.

“Emm-” he didn’t let me finish because he clicked his tongue and grabbed my chin forcefully.

“Emmett! Emmett! Emmett! It’s Nicholas” he sneered while I looked at him hurt by his revelation.

“Hard to believe? Hu?” he laughed “You wanted to hear the truth? Here is the truth! I am Nicholas Greer” and he pushed me to the ground. I fell on my side and winced feeling my sides

hurting. But I refused to look back at him or get up from the place. Because I wanted to hide my face. I was so embarrassed at myself. How did I not get it from the beginning?

Is he Nicholas?

Has he killed Zachary's sister?

Is he a murderer?

Did I love a murderer?

All these questions roamed inside my head and I sobbed and wept as the bitter reality hit me hard on my face. All of a sudden the world seemed to rotate and my vision blurred as I felt little dizzy.

"Yes, Nicholas Greer" I heard him and heard his footsteps next to mine but as soon as he got near I saw another foot walking my way from my peripheral vision and all of a sudden a heard a whoomp sound.

"Don't touch her!" I heard Zachary.

It was Zachary.

Mustering up courage, I looked back to see Zachary kicking Emmett on his stomach.

"You bastard! How dare you touch her?" was what I heard when I was really close to losing my sense.

I felt a hand on my arms and I looked up to see it, Willi.

"Get up!" he said as he helped me get up on my foot.

As he held me from my arms I saw Zachary's assaults on Emmett.

"Zac-Zachary" I tried to stop him.

He looked back at me with rage filled in his eyes but soon he left a whimpering Emmett alone rolling on the ground.

All of a sudden Emmett starting laughing. He laughed hard as he wiped the tears away from the corner of his eyes and he got up wincing back on his foot.

"You can't save her every time you know" he laughed hysterically looking straight into Zachary's eyes.

"You are soon going to die soon. Let my dad find me out first. Then I will see each and every one of you. You all will pay for this!" he snarled at Zachary. Zachary rolled his shoulder and took a step closer to him.

"We will see," he said in a low threatening tone and turned around and walked towards me and held me by my waist as he made me walk towards the door.

“You can’t save her every time!” I heard Emmett as we walked out of the room.

I saw some people walking into that room walking past us.

“H-He betrayed me!” was what I muttered and felt Zachary’s arm tightening on mine torso.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 34

Zachary Pov

I asked my people to take care of that mutt inside that room. How did he even manage to untie himself? I looked to my side to find Juliette sitting silently, leaning against the car window.

She was way too silent. I looked forward and saw Willi looking at me through the rearview mirror of the car. He looked worried. I signaled him with my eyes to concentrate on the road.

I sighed as I rubbed my face with my hand and looked out of the window. My life is messed up right now. I can't just understand what is going on in my life. But I know that it is Juliette's life who's life is a way too messed up than me right now. Finally, the truth of Emmett being Nicholas is revealed to her. But it was not the really how I hoped her to find out. It was uncertain. It was not really how I have had planned for which I am not really happy.

But contradictorily, only half of the truth is revealed to her. There is even more. She needs to find out more about what is going on. I hope she understands.

Ironically, I know my behavior towards her from last these days, was not really good. I was cruel to her. I locked her up, away from everyone when she was already away from her own familiar people. Firstly, it was for her own safety. Because, as I had Nicholas I knew his father would to no avail to find out about him and if he knew Juliette was the reason then he would surely, attack Juliette. Secondly, I let my emotions get to me.

I glanced towards her to find her looking out of the window lost in thoughts. I knew that it was way too much for her to handle but the questions which have been nagging me is how did she even get out of the house with all that tight security?

Are my boys not enough to stop her from getting out?

If she can get out of the house so easily than anybody can get inside the house way too easily. b

This is not good.

I need to have a serious talking to all my boys.

But currently, her state was affecting me. She looked mentally disturbed right now as her eyes looked distant and she kept on clutching onto the hem of her shirt tightly. Probably, thinking about what just happened. But it's not the only thing that I have to deal with.

My family. I need to face them now, for my behavior from these last few days towards Juliette has not been unnoticed by my family. Especially, by my grandfather. I hope he doesn't ask me oo much and let me handle the situation of my own. I can handle mom and even Gale but I can't really say the same about the grandfather.

I sighed as I balled my fist and put it in my mouth. I was frustrated now because Juliette being in such a condition was disturbing me. She wasn't uttering any single word and for the first time ever I hoped for her to at least tell me how she was feeling.

Or am I exaggerating things?

Maybe she is just fine as it is. Probably, she has managed to cope up with the truth and she is fine now.

"Then why is it making you anxious?" I thought as I looked out of the window.

We reached the house, and soon as the car came to a halt, Juliette opened the door and walked straight into the house avoiding my men who were looking at her in a confused way. They still didn't know how she was with me. Now, this is a question which I am going to answer with a question of mine own on how did she even manage to get out of the house without anyone noticing her.

I made my way out and looked at her retreating back as she walked back in inside the house.

Maybe she wants some space. Some time alone to herself.

"Boss" I heard one of my men while I waited Juliette get inside the house.

"You all are fired! Get out" I said and walked towards the house with Max and Willi following me.

"But Boss!" I heard one of them which made me stop in my track.

"There is no place for losers in my place. You all failed to stop a simple woman getting out of the house. How will you even protect her from all those people out there?" I asked and took a step but stopped.

"Make sure to get out before the evening if you don't want your end so soon" a silence was heard.

"You all should have known. I lack tolerant and I'm benevolent" I said while I walked back inside.

"Assign new people in their place," I told Max who nodded before leaving for his work.

Once inside, I made my way towards my room ignoring mom who tried to ask me something. Probably, about Juliette. I will answer all her questions later but for now, I wanted to have a talk with Juliette. She needs to tell me how did even managed to get out with all that tight security. As I stepped a foot on the staircase, I stopped when I heard some noises. The noises were coming from the upstairs. Thinking something must be wrong, I took long strides and ran upstairs and followed the sound which led me to my own room. With the door spread open, things crashed down as I saw Juliette throwing things like a mad woman to the floor.

She would occasionally wipe her tears with the sleeves of her dress and pull her hair in agony. She took the lamp from the bedside and threw it on the mirror shattering it into pieces.

“I have been torturing myself thinking that I failed and I couldn’t save you!” she screamed looking at the pieces of mirror which were stuck on the wall hanging loosely.

“I am so dumb! I have been torturing myself. Fucking torturing myself crying myself to sleep thinking because of me], you died. But what did I get?” all of a sudden she laughed clapping her hands hysterically. But then sobbed and knelt down on the ground keeping her head on the bed.

“Betrayal! Betrayal” she said slowly at the beginning but soon her tone raised and she screamed “Betrayal!” and took the already broken lamp piece and threw it again on the wall.

Her condition makes me want to pity her. So, why did I feel the opposite? I felt what I think must be uneasiness and bad. She loved him. This is the condition you get when you are betrayed in love? Does this what love makes you?

I took a step back and slowly closely the door. She needs some space and time. Her wounds wouldn’t heal this quickly. I will give her some time. I am happy that at least I have never been through such type of agony and mental break down. If this is what love makes you then I am fine away from it. I don’t need anyone in my life.

Dialing a number, I demanded Cosmina on the other end to be present for Juliette at this moment. She may be hurt mentally but that act of throwing things and that broken mirror pieces may have hurt her. Cosmina would look at it. I believe she can look after her for some hour before the next most shocking truth of Juliette’s life would be revealed before her.

I have already called her father and it may take some hours for him to reach here. I believe he can clear everything and make her understand everything. But most importantly, seeing Juliette’s condition I believe she needs someone from her family to make her feel somewhat relieved.

And that reminds me of Nicholas, I need to free him soon. Because I never really intended to kill him. The one whom I want to kill is his father. I have to think about a way to get him and I believe releasing Nicholas will surely lead me to his father. Everything that is wrong started from his father. He is the real cause of everything that is wrong today. Because of him, Juliette has to go through all this today. Because of him, my family lost my sister. I know he was the mastermind behind the plan to kill my sister and initially, he used his own son as a pawn in this game.

I went inside my study room and sat on the lounge tired. I hoped Juliette’s father to be here as soon as possible because it would really help as now she knows part of the truth. She needs to know the whole damn story.

Raking a hand through my hair, I sighed when the door burst open and mom walked in looking as if she was going to kill me.

It looks like she too needs to know about everything that has been going on.

No more of hiding things.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 35

Juliette POV

“Everything is finished.” I pulled my hair in frustration and agony.

“Everything is finished.”I took the broken lamp from the ground and threw it on the wall.”

“Doamnă!” I heard someone but I ignored the person as I tumbled down to the floor and rested my head against the side of the bed.

“Are u alright?”It was Cosmina.

“Oh my God! What have you done? Ma’am, you’re bleeding! Wait!” I heard her and guessed that she must be going to the bathroom for the first aid kit. I looked down and surely saw my hands filled with scratches and was bleeding. And pants were ripped and my bare foot had some scratches as well. But, it all didn’t matter to me but what hurt me was my sentiments and emotions. My emotions were burdening over my shoulder. I was pretty much disheartened and filled with rage because today I had lost my confidence in myself.

I had lost my faith in myself. I couldn’t quite comprehend what was correct and what was not. It seems as if every decision that I made in the past was incorrect and resulted in me in failure. I was broke, and I felt as if I lost my own soul. Betrayal was the cause of all these emotions that I was feeling right now.

Minutes later, I heard some shuffling in the background and felt someone touching my arms. It was definitely Cosmina because she started inspected my wounds while I sobbed not caring anything that was going on in my surrounding.

“Please let me see!” I heard her before I felt my consciousness giving up.

“What happened over here?” I heard someone as I felt my consciousness regaining.

Everything looked blurry at first, then I blinked my eyes several times and looked around myself to find myself on the bed. People were taking away the broken things, that I had broken and the room looked cleaner than it was when I lost my consciousness. I looked at my hand to find it bandaged and when I looked to my side I saw two pairs of eyes looking down at me, worried evident on their faces.

One was Cosmina and another was Zachary’s mother. She sat down next to me and rubbed my forehead. Not able to control my feelings anymore, I took her hand in mine and cried leaning against it.

“Oh my god! Juliette! What happened? Dear why are you crying?” she held my hand in her and rubbed soothingly over the bandaged hand.

I continued sobbing and from the corner of my eyes, I saw Cosmina playing with her finger looking worried.

“Did something happened you and Zachary? A fight?” mom asked.

I wish that was the problem. How terribly I wished that I had never met Emmett and how terribly I hoped that my tears should belong to Zachary, not to the person whom I loved the most. Contradictorily, I was crying today only for the person whom I loved the most not because of the one whom I hated the most.

What is going on in my life?

Why is everything so messed up in my life?

“Juliette dear, please stop crying. My heart is beating so fastly now. Oh my god! Please dear, stop crying” mom leaned her head against mine still rubbing my forearms.

“Cosmina!” all of a sudden mom raised her head up and looked towards Cosmina.

“Tell me! What is going on?” she asked almost in a rude way.

“I-” Cosmina was cut off by Zachary who walked through the door and stood next to the bed behind mom. His eyes bored into mine for a few seconds, before it left mine and traveled down to my bandaged hands. I saw his jaw clenching for a few seconds before he looked around the room and then back at mine.

“We had a fight!” he stated simply.

“Fight? For what?” mom asked looking at him sternly.

“She doesn’t want to leave this house,” he said and that statement made me look up at him questionably.

What does he mean?

“Oh my god!” mom exclaimed as she kept my hand softly on the bed and stood up.

“You are still repeating the same thing? Why do you want to leave this house? I do not understand! This is your house, Juliette’s house. Why can’t we all stay together? Even she doesn’t want to leave then why are you keen on leaving?” she said in a rage and then looked back at me.

“We are a married couple mom. We want our privacy!” Zachary said and all of a sudden I choked on my own spit.

Privacy?

“Are you not ashamed boy?” Mom asked in a low tone looking curtly at him and then at Cosmina.

Cosmina gasped and then looked here and there before saying “Um, I must leave now. I have work pending” she bent her head obliged.

“Very well! Then leave” mom said.

“Why is she so cold to her?” I wondered.

“Ashamed of what? Mother?” Zachary asked as he folded his arms across his chest and looked at hr narrowing his eyes.

“Zachar-” she was cut off by him “We already had this argument mother. Now please!” Zachary said and then walked up to me and sat next to me.

“Very well! What about you dear? Do you not want to live here?” mom asked me with hope filled eyes.

I felt a soft pinch on my thigh. It was Zachary.

What should I say?

Will it be good if we leave this place?

But why does Zachary wants us to leave? We were better here. I was better. Though I couldn’t communicate with my family, having mom and the others around me somehow eased my tension. So, why does he want us to leave?

“Dear?” mom asked again.

“Whatever he feels is right,” I croaked out with difficulty.

She exhaled out a breath in annoyance and shook her head.

“Of course!” she muttered.

“We will be leaving tonight!” said Zachary all of a sudden.

“Tonight?” mom and I questioned in unison.

“What?” asked we asked in unison.

“Tonight? Are you kidding me?” mom said and glared at Zachary who just nodded much to her annoyance.

“What the hell is wrong with you boy?” she said and both of them had another heated argument until mom gave up and she stormed out of the room giving an excuse that she was going to prepare for our departure party. She said party in a sarcastic way and left obviously not happy.

“Why do we need to leave?” I asked slowly looking back at Zachary who was looking towards the door where mom just left a few minutes ago.

“For my family’s safety!” he said and got up from the bed and went into the walk in closet.

“Family’s safety!” I muttered. Of course! he doesn’t want anything to happen to his family because of me. Seeing people wanting to kill me, there must be a reason why he said that. Why does Emmett want to kill me anyways? What did I even do? Sour thoughts flowed back into my mind as I thought about him.

“I should call him Nicholas!” I thought.

When the night came, I sat on the bed holding a pillow against my chest. My things were already packed and two men came into the room to take my bags away. Now, I sat on the bed lost in my thoughts thinking what has next planned by my fate for me. My life is so messed up and my fate is playing with me at every point of my life. What did I ever do to deserve this?

A knock on the door broke me out of my state.

“Mom!” I said when I saw her there looking at me with a small smile on her face. Sh looked sad and she was holding a small bag with her. With her hair done in a side braid, and wearing a long orange gown she looked elegant and beautiful conning her own age. Age is just a number perfectly demonstrates her appearance.

“How are you?” she asked once walked in and took a seat next to me.

“I am good!” I lied to her with a smile on my face.

“Hmm,” she hummed in response nodding her head.

“I am here to give you something!” she said and I watched as she fished a box out of that bag.

“Here!” she handed it to me and asked me to open it. Reluctantly, I obliged to her and I opened it only to find a necklace inside it. Beautiful but old designed necklace. It was indeed a traditional gold choker necklace.

“Oh, my! It’s beautiful” I said trailing my finger on it.

“It was passed down to me by Zachary’s grandmother. It is our traditional necklace which we pass down to our generation. It’s from our ancestors” she said and I looked down at it.

“I am giving it to you now!” she said all of a sudden which made me gasp in shock.

“What? No! I mean mom I can’-”

“Juliette!” she said cutting me off “You are my daughter-in-law! I must hand over this to you. It’s my duty being in this Sullivan family and I expect you to hand it over to your generation too!” she said and that made me clench my fists in agony.

“I doubt I could ever give you a generation!” I thought.

“Let me see this on you,” she said as she took the necklace from me and got off from the bed and made an effort to tie it around my neck.

“Mom!” she cut me off again “Please let me, Juliette! I always had this dream to give this necklace to my daughter-in-law with my own hands. I have waited so long for this moment to finally see my son happy with someone. Never had I imagined, that he would ever call someone else as his family and today he did. He called you his family Juliette!” she said and that got my attention.

“Yes! he calls you his family. I can’t express how happy I feel today. Finally, he will be able to live like a normal being away from all this. This all happened only because of you dear. I don’t know how you two met but I am glad that you did, else I would never have seen this side of him” her voice broke in the end and I saw tears sprinting her eyes.

What is she talking about?

“Though I still dislike the idea of you two moving out yet I have come to this point that I will not force you two. Beforehand, when Zachary told me about you two leaving I was okay with it, but day by day when I thought about it I became greedy. I couldn’t bear the feeling that my son is now grown up and it’s finally the time where he wants to stand up for himself, for his family” she croaked out.

“Mom!” I got up and hugged her while she cried on my shoulder.

“But it’s okay!” she said and I gave her some space stepping back a little.

“I can trust you. I trust him to you. I believe you will bring happiness to him and for that, I am honored to pass this necklace down to you. See this as my trust of handing my son to you Juliette!” she said and she tied it around my neck.

In the car, after we said our goodbyes to mom, dad and grandfather I looked at Zachary who was driving. I touched the necklace with sorrow. I am not at all happy owning it. It burdens me with responsibility. I don’t really think that I could provide happiness to anyone. I have failed and tumbled so hard in my life that I can barely stand on my own. How can I support Zachary in all this? I don’t even have any idea why we are even together. Why is he even with me?

I looked at him while he drove the car silently. I heard a thunder and soon it rained heavily. Only the sound of water hitting the glass and the sound of the rubber wiper blades moving on the windshield could be heard. He didn’t even have the radio on. I looked at the glass window, but I couldn’t see anything because of the rain.

“Slow down a little,” I said slowly when I noticed the speedometer. Dangerous to go at such a speed when it’s raining. I doubted he would ever oblige to me but surprisingly, he did. He reduced the speed but he didn’t even glance my way, continued concentrating on the road.

Four hours later, the rain was milder in the area where we were. The car finally stopped before a gate. I watched as a guard came holding an umbrella and Zachary rolled down the window screen.

“Boss!” he saluted.

“Make sure nobody gets in! Nobody is allowed until they have my written permission!” Zachary said and the guard nodded before opening the gate and Zachary drove inside the area filled with trees at the roadside. Minutes later, a mansion came into view. If Zachary’s previous was huge then this one was gigantic.

The car came to a halt and I watched as Zachary got out of the car. Following him, I stepped down the car and saw the white cream coated mansion shining because of the lights that reflected on it. The white colored mansion towered over me as if trying to intimidate me. I gaped at it for a few seconds before I looked at the sidewalks where varieties of plants were planted alongside the sidewalk. The place was two times huge than the previous one and only thinking about it made me sad. I would feel even more lonely in here.

II looked back towards the lawn to see a marble fountain sitting in the middle of the lawn. It had a lion in its center and water spurted out of its mouth, the water fell gently towards the crystal blue pool which had lights under it which made it shine and the water fell beneath it, causing ripples to form and wave out until they were no more. Beautiful piece of an architecture. I heard the door opening and saw two women dressed in classy maid outfits walking out to us.

“Doamnă!” both of them bowed their head to me.

Umm...

“Call the other workers and ask them to bring our bags to our room!” I heard Zachary and I looked at him when he spoke to them.

Without giving me a glance, he walked in and I followed after him, not knowing what to do. We walked inside and I found myself flabbergasted looking at the work done inside the house. Marbled floor, classy, expensive and elegant interior.

I was so busy in gaping at everything that I didn’t even notice when he stopped in his tracks which cause me to bump into him on his back.

“Watch where you walk!” he said slowly in a scolding tone. I nodded and hurriedly, took the loose curls of my hair that fell on my face and moved it behind my ear.

“Straight from this way and the first left. Take the stairs and the second room is the one!” he said and without letting me speak he walked away.

“Zach-” I stopped in mid-sentence when I saw his retreating back.

Sighing, I walked reminding myself of the instructions that he gave and soon enough stood before a door. I opened the huge door only to come into a huge room.

“Wow!” I heard my own voice.

A big room with partitions which made it another room inside it. Both of the room in my view had a king sized bed. First, there was a small hall where table and lounges were placed and then the rooms with partition. Only one attached bathroom and I saw curtains flying in one part of the room and assumed the door to the balcony. The room didn't have walk-in-closet but a huge wardrobe and I saw a huge wooden panel folding screen at the corner for changing clothes, I guessed.

Expensive artistic classy paintings on the wall and the room had dark navy color paint on its wall with some parts splashed white like the roof, the beam. The room was indeed dark yet modern. I call the mansion modern because I saw a pool inside the mansion when I walked up the stairs previously. Classy yet modern. Mirror everywhere. Next to the bed, on the pillar, next to the wardrobe. I gasped when I saw something next to the door of the balcony. The same recliner chair, that I selected back in that furniture shop. It was there. So, Zachary was talking about this house.

I assumed the partition of the room for us to sleep away from each other. Nobody was here so, I assumed Zachary wouldn't like to put on the act of showing us as if we were a couple. I chose the bed and went directly to it. It was what I could see. I was tired. As I was about to sit on the bed, my eyes fell on my own reflection in the mirror. I was wearing a white v neck lace dress and what my eyes specifically saw was the necklace.

I still had that necklace on me. I walked to the mirror and looked at the necklace. It was beautiful but I knew I couldn't keep it.

"It would be better if I handed it over to Zachary" I spoke to myself and took it out of my neck.

I walked out of the room and to the place where I had last seen Zachary. I walked towards the direction where he went a few minutes ago. It leads me in front of a single door. I took in a deep breath before knocking on the door few times and I opened the door.

It was a study room. Shelves filled with books, trophies, and medals. Paintings hanging on the navy blue wall, pictures some family pictures, achievements, certificates in frames hanging on the wall. The room was bigger than Zachary's last study room in that house. A large table in the middle and there he sat working on his laptop. A large window screen behind him where I marked the rain again pouring heavily.

"What do you want?" he asked not even glancing my way.

He had his white shirt undone from the top and his black coat was thrown on the couch next to his table. For the first time ever, I saw him wearing glasses as he worked on his laptop.

"How did you know that it was me?" I asked as I walked up to him. Still, he didn't even look up at me.

He seemed to ignore me as he continued working on his laptop punching the keyboard furiously.

I sighed at his behavior and then placed the necklace before him on the table before him which instantly stopped him from typing further on his laptop. He looked at the necklace but didn't even look up at me.

"What is this?" he asked still not even looking up at me.

"This necklace is given to me by your mother!" I said and frowned when he still didn't look up at me.

What is his problem?

"So?" he questioned.

"It is from your ancestors. Your family has this tradition to pass down this necklace to their generations!" I said.

"I know that!" he stated and continued with his typing.

"I am giving this back to you. I do not belong to your family" when I said this he stopped his typing but didn't look up.

"So, I assumed it would be better if stayed with you and you hand it over to the right person. I am not th-" I was rudely cut off him by him.

"Yeah! Okay! Now leave me alone!" he said and continued with his typing. More furiously this time.

"Okay?" I said more like a question.

"I am going back to the room," I said and shook my head at him before turning around and leaving.

"Did I expect an act of chivalry from him? What is wrong with me?" I thought as I closed the door behind me.

"So rude!" I said out loud and walked towards the room.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 36

Juliette POV

When I got back inside the room I went directly to my suitcase and got my sleep wears out of it. After changing into my blue shirt and full pants. I lied down on the bed and waited for sleep to overtake me. Moments from the morning came flooded into my mind. I tossed around in the bed hoping that if I slept I would no longer have to bear the pain that I was suffering but unfortunately nothing seemed to be working because I wasn't feeling sleepy at all. So, I got up and sat on the bed for some minutes. I didn't even have a phone to pass some time.

My eyes fell on the clock that was on the opposite wall. Half past one in the midnight.I sighed and thought about walking inside the room for some while till I feel sleepy. Getting up from the bed, I went to the other side of the partition only to notice the door. Then I thought about getting some fresh air from the balcony.

I went there and opened the door to the balcony. As soon as I did that my hair blew backward because of the cold breeze that hit me on my face. I felt relieved and took in a deep breath to control my nerves. The scenery was beautiful from the balcony. We were away from the main city but still, I could see lights from where I stood. The mansion was surrounded by trees as if an attempt to remain hidden.

There was a small table with two chairs on the side of the balcony. I went there and took a seat on the chair and sat for some minutes feeling the cold air relaxing my tense nerves until I felt sleepy. A yawn escaped my mouth as I stretched my arms in the air and got up from the chair. Making sure, that I closed the balcony's door I went back to the other partition of the room and lied down on the middle of the king sized bed sprawling my hands and legs in all direction before drifting off to sleep.

I tossed around but couldn't, I felt as if I was caged or being stopped from tossing around. It somehow made me suffocated. Moaning and groaning in irritation and my eyes blinked several times adjusting to the light. Stretching my arms in the air, I tried to get up when I realized something on my torso.

"What the-" I said and looked at what it was.

"An arm?" I thought and looked at the owner of the owner sleeping next to me.

"Zachary" I narrowed my eyes at him.

"I know that you are awake! What do you think that you are doing?" I asked with my hoarse voice and tried to push him away.

"And why are you shirtless?" I groaned and tried to push him but to no avail did he even budge.

“Zachary!” he didn’t even open his eyes. I stopped wiggling and looked at his face. He was sleeping on his belly with the side of his face on the pillow, his hair messy and falling on his forehead, mouth slightly open and anyone in my place would have thought he might be deep in sleep but I knew the truth. He was awake. He is the type of person who wakes up early in the morning without any reason. I looked to the side and read the clock to be eight in the morning.

“What is he still doing in the bed?” I thought.

“Zachary! Hey! Wake up!” I tried to get myself free from his grip but it looked as if he was tightening his grip knowingly.

“What the hell! Ow! Zach- oh my goodness! Okay, I can’t breath!” and I smacked on his back using my left free hand.

“Zachary!” I pinched on his side.

“Ow!” he flinched this time and opened his eyes glaring at me.

“Good Morning to you” I smirked and bat my eyelashes sweetly at him.

“Will you remove your arms around me? Why are you even in this bed? Do you not own a shirt?” I pushed him but all he did was glaring at me.

“What?” I snapped.

“Who told you to sleep in the middle of the bed? You could have slept on your side!” he said in his morning husky voice that made me umm.

“Well I- Excuse me? You could have taken the other bed!” I stated the obvious.

“Oh just shut up and let me sleep. I am tired” he said and closed his eyes.

“Well duh sleep who is even denying you not to sleep? Just let me go. Remove your arm from me” I said crossing my arms across my chest.

“Zachary!” I snapped when he didn’t respond.

“Zachary I’m telling you! Remove your arm this instant or I will-”

“Or what Juliette?” he mocked me and tightened his grip even more.

“O-r-r-r I-I-I will you please remove your arm? I will sleep on my side from next time. I will make sure okay?” I sighed.

“Juliette,” he said slowly and I looked back at him. His eyes were still closed and he was inhaling and exhaling softly. This was the first time he called my name so softly. Other times he would just scold or snap at me. I felt my heart beat rising instantly. What is happening to me? How does any of this make my heart beat rise?

“Uh?” I waited for him to speak.

"You are an idiot" he completed.

I looked at him with a stoic expression.

"What?" I thought.

"Zachary!" I snapped and I was ready to kill this asshole of a man this instant.

"Get ready!" he said as I watched him buttoning his blue shirt up.

"Why?" I asked still laying on the bed holding the pillow close to my chest.

"Do what I say Idiot!" he said and went to the wardrobe and got his suit out of it.

"Stop calling me an Idiot!" I snapped as I threw the pillow at him which hit him on his back and fell on the floor. I marched up to him and pushed him to the side and took my suitcase which was next to the wardrobe and walked into the bathroom all the way glaring at him while he put on his suit and looked at me weirdly.

I took a good shower and brushed my teeth. After I was done I went to my suitcase and pulled out a brown high neck midi length bodycon dress and my black coat out of it. Putting my dress on, I looked at myself in the mirror when I fully ready. I had put on a nude brown colored lipstick with some eyeliner and mascara and I had done my hair into a side fishtail braid. As I got out of the bathroom I saw him ready sitting on a chair in the hall scrolling through his phone.

He was wearing a black suit with navy blue button up shirt underneath and black pants, shiny black shoes and his hair as usually sleeked back perfectly.

I went to the wardrobe where I recalled putting my beige boots last night. I wore it and threw my braid to the side and looked back at Zachary to find him already looking up at me. He looked up and down before his eyes fell on my braid and he narrowed his eyes at me.

"What?" I asked slowly feeling intimidated by his gaze.

"Nothing," he said and got up and shoved his phone into his pant pockets.

"Let's go then," he said and I nodded removing the curls of hair that fell on my cheeks behind my ear.

He stood on his place and bit down on his lips before nodding and walking towards the door where I followed him and we both walked out of the house.

"Where are we going?" I asked as we sat inside the car while putting on the seat belts. Zachary just looked up at me while he put his seat belts on and then looked straight before he started the engine and we rode off.

I looked out of the window to find us driving out the mansion and then on the main road. I looked back at Zachary and saw him concentrating on the road. Biting down on my lips, I looked out of the window for the silence was disturbing me.

"What is he up to?" I couldn't help but think.

My thoughts wandered off to Emmett. I hissed at it, I should really start calling him by his real name. Nicholas. Nicholas, it is. I wondered where I would have been, where my life would have taken me if I had never met Nicholas in my life. Would I had ever met Zachary then? Coming to think about it, I came across Zachary only because Nicholas was his enemy. Would we ever turn up friends if we hadn't met under that circumstances?

I looked back at Zachary. He had his one hand on the steering wheel while other was on his forehead. He looked as if something was irritating him. It was still morning but he looked tired as if he hadn't taken rest from a long time. I wonder what had been causing him distress.

"I can't do this!" I heard him and all of a sudden the car stopped with a screeching sound coming from the wheels as I felt myself jerking forward due to the sudden stop but thankfully the seat belts saved me.

"Oh my goodness! Zachary?" I asked confused as I watched him wiping his face using his handkerchief. The air conditioner was on but still, he was sweating.

"Wh-What happened?" I asked slowly.

He looked at me and then put the handkerchief back inside his pocket.

"Nothing," he whispered and he drove the car again.

The whole way I kept on looking at his weird behavior.

"What is wrong with him?" I wondered. He would occasionally turn up to me but he remained tight-lipped. His behaviour was giving me odd assumptions and all of a sudden my mind kept on nagging about where he was taking me.

Is he taking me somewhere to hurt me?

No, can he hurt me?

Will he hurt me?

I clutched the fabric of my dress and bite down on my lips. My fingers kept on twitching and unwantedly my eyes stung because of tears that threatened to fall off any moment. Was I scared?

The car came to a halt before a building. The building had its name in bold letters "Sullivan Real Estate" I got out of the car and looked up at the building. The building stood intimidating the buildings nearby and guessing from the name, it was Zachary's office building.

So this his workplace?

He handed over his car keys to the guard and the guard got inside the car and drove away perhaps for parking. I followed Zachary inside the building where everyone bowed or greeted him "Good Morning." While some were looking at me cautiously and with confusion. I guess they don't really have any idea who I was.

We opened the door of the elevator and got inside. I stood outside, not able to move my feet. Memories of what happened last time in that furniture shop came flooding into my mind. What if it stopped again with us inside?

"No!" I spoke and I could feel beads of sweat forming on my forehead only imagining my condition if the elevator. I saw the door of the elevator was about to close when Zachary kept his hand stopping it from closing.

The door slid opened and he looked at me questionably about why I was not getting in. His lips moved as if he was about to say something but then he stopped in the middle and made a face as if he recognized what was my problem.

I waited for him to snap or scold me but something different happened. He got hold of mine hand and pulled me inside. A gasp escape my mouth when I collided against his hard chest.

"No!" I said and turned around wanting to leave the elevator but he held me by my waist and made me turn back to him. I clutched his shirt tightly closing my eyes when I heard the door of the elevator shutting with a ping sound and I felt when the elevator moved with a jerk.

"God!" I thought. I felt him tightening his grip on my waist pulling me closer to him.

Why is he doing this? Is he trying to save me? Why?

My eyes flickered open and I looked here and there before looking up at him. He already had his eyes on me. I felt him holding my hand that was clutching his shirt. He looked straight into my eyes. Deep brown eyes boring into mine as I felt my breathing increasing.

What is going on?

The elevator stopped and the door pinged open. Realizing that, I jerked up in my place and removed my hands from his hold. I gulped down the lump that formed in my throat and biting my lips I took in a deep breath in.

What is going on?

He cleared his throat and walked out of the elevator. I rubbed my forehead before following him.

"Good morning sir!" it was Cosmina. She wore a peach-colored business suit and pencil skirt with a white shirt underneath. She had left her blonde hair down today and she held the tab in her hand and she looked back at me.

“Doamnă! Good Morning” she bowed her head.

“Good Morning Cosmina,” I said to which she smiled.

“Is he here?” Zachary asked ignoring her greetings.

This man!

“Yes, Sir! el este aici (he is here)" Cosmina said and looked at me before saying “în acea cameră (in that room).”

I stood there not even understanding a word. Were they talking in a code language? Of course Romanian but why are they talking in Romanian when both of them know that I don’t understand a single word.

Cruel world!

“Come!” Zachary said and I raised an eyebrow and looked at him when he forwarded his hand for me to take. Not knowing what to do I took his hand and he held my hand firmly before speaking something to Cosmina in Romanian. I wanted to hit his head with the heel of my boots. I don’t understand anything.

He looked back at me and then pulled me closer to his side.

“Make sure nobody disturbs us. It’s an important meeting” he told this to Cosmina and she nodded in response. Zachary walked further which looked like it was the direction to his cabin. We stopped before a door on which it was written in bold letters “Ceo Mr. Sullivan” I looked back at Zachary wanting to question him if it was his room but stopped when I saw him all tensed up.

“Go in!” he said and I held myself from asking why me first? Turning the door open I walked in and was about to look back at Zachary if he is coming or not when my eyes fell on the person who was sitting on the sofa and stood up as soon as he saw me.

“Dad?” I heard my croaking voice and tears fell down my cheeks when he walked up to me.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 37

Juliette Pov

“Go in!” he said and I held myself from asking why me first? Turning the door open I walked in and was about to look back at Zachary whether he is coming or not when my eyes fell on the person who was sitting on the sofa and stood up as soon as he saw me.

“Dad?” I heard my voice croaking at the end and tears fell down my cheeks when he walked up to me with his arms open for me.

“Oh, my sweetheart!” he said as I ran into his arms and he embraced me lovingly pulling me up to him.

“Dad!” I sobbed into his chest while he rubbed my back occasionally patting on my head.

“How are you my princess?” he cooed into my ear. That made me cry even harder. It’s been so long since I had heard him. I have missed him terribly.

“Juliette,” he said as I withdrew back and he wiped the tears affectionately. I looked up at him. He seemed to grow older from the last time I saw him. He didn’t even dye those gray hair from the sides, which is something new because he never loved seeing those gray hair on his head.

“Mom? Where is mom?” my eyes searched for my mom inside the room. I thought if dad was here then mom and Jace must be here too. But I didn’t see them.

“Dad where is Jace, Mom?” I asked gripping his suit while he nodded his head no which immediately drowned me into disappointment.

“Why?” I cried bobbing my head disappointed.

“Don’t worry darling, they will be here soon. I wanted to meet you so I came here as quickly as I could. They will be here soon” he said as he cupped my cheek and smiled down at me.

That reminded me what had happened previously. What were the conditions that made me; we separated away from each other. My marriage, Nicholas, Zachary. Realization hit me and I looked back at Zachary who stood near the door with his hands inside his pocket. I turned back to dad and whispered: “Did Zachary do something with them?” I referred mom and Jace.

Dad looked taken aback for a moment but then he looked to where Zachary was standing and then back at me.

“Dear Mr. Zachary can never hurt us or our family” dad said smiling down at me. That confused me. Why would he not hurt my family?

“How are you so sure? What is going on?” I asked when we heard a clearing of a throat.

“I can hear everything you know?” Zachary said and I looked back at him biting down on my lips. I thought I was whispering. How can he still hear? Has he got the ears of a dog? No wonder he is a dog.

“It’s great to know what you think of me!” he said sarcastically rolling his eyes.

“Did I say out loud?” I questioned myself to which dad gave the answer “Yes dear! You did!”

“It’s great to have here Mr. Swanson. Thank you for coming on short notice” Zachary said as he walked forward and both of them shook their hands while I stood in the middle looking at them as if they were aliens.

What’s going on?

“Thank You for taking care of my daughter,” dad said and that made me snap my head towards his direction. I looked back at Zachary to find him already looking at me.

“Is there something that you need to clarify dad?” I asked looking at Zachary. He narrowed his eyes at me and asked dad and me to take a seat on the office couch.

We took a seat with dad right next to me on while Zachary chose to seat across me on the single sofa.

“I know you two are hiding something from me, and I don’t like it. Dad!” I turned to him “Please! Tell me, what’s going on? I am fed up of being in dark. These past few days have been very hard for me. I have been seeing the other side of my life and I am not really liking it. Dad do you know, Emmett is alive! He betrayed me. He is not the person with whom I was in love and even his identity was not true. He was playing with me, with my sentiments and emotions. Dad! He betrayed me. Do you know who he is? He told me that his name is not Emmett bu-“ dad cut me off in the middle “But Nicholas Greer” dad completed while I sat there with my mouth wide open.

“Y-You knew?” I asked slowly to which he replied by nodding ‘yes.’

“Wow!” I exclaimed rubbing my face with my palms.

“From when?” I questioned.

“From the beginning!” he replied. I turned toward him in disbelief.

“What? From the beginning?” I questioned and he shifted in his position nodding positively.

“Wh- What?” I exclaimed in disbelief. “Wow, dad! Just wow! Then why did you not tell me about this? And I just don’t understand what did I ever do to be involved in all this. Why does Em- I mean Nicholas wants to kill me? Why did he hide his identity and how do you know his real his identity? Why is Zachary involved in all this and why am I kept in the dark?” I snapped rudely at dad.

He sighed and looked down.

“Juliette!” Zachary called and I looked at him. “He is here to clarify all these to you. Easy there!” he narrowed his eyes whilst I glared back at him.

Does he think himself as my father?

“Okay! I’m sorry dad!” I said sighing as I looked back dad. I felt guilty for snapping at him. Look at him, he came all this way to me and what did I do? So ungrateful of me.

“It’s okay princess. I understand what you are going through but please trust me. I was restrained from telling you the truth. I wanted to tell you from the beginning that that guy is not good for you, not only because I knew his true identity but also because he threatened me that he would hurt you and Jace if I told you about him.

“What! But why?” I questioned not believing what dad unveiled before me.

“That is why I am here to tell you everything. Okay? But before that please promise me that you will hear until the end and you won’t judge me until I reach the end” dad said and suddenly anxiety began to build up inside me.

“Why does he want me to make a promise like that? It must be really something that I guess I wouldn’t like and I think he knows it. This is the reason he wants me to make a promise to him?” I wondered and nodded my head agreeing that I will listen till the end. But I didn’t make any promise because I knew I could break them if I didn’t like what he was going to present before me.

“Okay! So it’s a big story” he said as he rubbed his palms on his pants probably because he was nervous. Whenever my dad was nervous he would have his palms all sweaty and he would always rub it on his pants which my mom hated the most.

“Tell me, dad!” I asked slowly encouraging him to tell.

“So, do you remember how we became so wealthy all of a sudden?” he said and I gave him an astonished look.

“What? I mean yes. It was because you worked hard for our family and-“ he cut me off.

“The story begins from here. It is not what you think! I did something to reach this position and I am really ashamed of it!” he said and he cupped his face hiding his face from me.

That didn’t really help me. My nerves tensed up and I looked back at Zachary. He sat calmly and stared between us and then averted his gaze away from.

Not a help!

“Dad!” I reached forward and held his hands removing it from his face. Though I was the one who was in the state of passing out any second, still I compromised with myself for sake of my father and ensured him that I was there and I will not judge him.

“I got myself into this mafia world,” he said and suck in my breath in complete disbelief.

“Believe me, Juliette! I did all this for you!” he cupped my face. “For your mother, for Jace, for our family! Because we were in a very condition that time. We were broke and we would have ended up in the gutter if I did consider getting myself involved in this mafia business!” he said lowering his head and I nodded agreeing with him.

“I knew how much you hated crime and criminals. I never wanted to see those hateful eyes that you always had for those criminals for me. This is why I hid it from you and Jace” he finished and I withdrew my hands from him. He looked at me as if he was hurt by my actions. But I reassured him that I was not angry by putting one of my hand back on his. A small smile appeared on his face by my action and he held my hand tightly assured.

“So, mom knew everything?” I asked and he nodded.

“Your mom also hated all this but she chose to compromise for her family,” he said and I nodded.

“Then we were back in the society. We were rich, powerful but people didn’t really knew our true identity. I made sure nobody found out who I was. I made sure that you and Jace have a normal life away from all this crime. But you know that phrase ‘Avarice is root of all evils’ I became greedy. I wanted to earn more money and because of that I did a mistake. That is when I met a person named James who was in this mafia business. He was known for selling all types of illegal drugs. We became partners and we earned lots of money” I exhaled out air and looked up to the ceiling while he continued.

“We were always in profit until James betrayed me,” he said and that made me look back at him.

“He sold some important weapons without me knowing and to top of that he had stolen it from a powerful mafia don. That don got to know all this and they captured James but James put all the blame on me. He said that he did that because I had ordered him to do that. He said that he was working under me and I was his boss. He lied to them to save his life putting mine in danger. The don’s name was Vito. He would have killed me that day but I remember one of his men coming up to him and whispering something to him about me. All of a sudden, I saw a new phase of my life. The man claimed that he did a background check on me and my family. He came to know about my dad and your grandfather, Joshua Sullivan had left billions on his will in your name. In your name Juliette” dad held me by my arms “In your name” he smiled.

“What?” I asked in disbelief.

“Grandpa?” I questioned.

I don't even remember him. He died when I was merely three or four years old because of Cancer. Jace was not even born at that time and he never really got to meet our grandfather.

"Yes! All of a sudden I came to know that father was also into mafia when he was young and he had saved billions. That just blew my mind. Trust me, I didn't have any idea about all these things unless that man brought this out. How he even came to know I don't know but as you were my daughter and the only grandchild to my father that time, he had signed all his possessions to your name. I came to know about his will and came to know that you would be the owner of all his possessions once you turned twenty-one."

I leaned back against the couch in disbelief. Is there anything more surprising left?

"Vito came to know about this too and he was astonished that I didn't have any idea about all this. Surprisingly, he even got to know about the betrayal. He killed James for playing with him before me. He killed him before me because he wanted to plant fear inside me for him. All of a sudden he freed me. He told me that I can go enjoy my life with my family."

"I was confused but happy that I was walking alive from his cage. I came back to our family and took a decision that I would give up on mafia. I had got to know that the mafia world was not meant for me. I didn't belong there. It seems as if father didn't really have any trust on me so, he signed all his will on your name Juliette. I thought I have earned enough to lead a happy life away from crime and criminals but everything fell into pieces the day you brought Nicholas home referring him as your boyfriend. You kept on calling him Emmett when I was sure that I had seen him somewhere beforehand. So, one day he himself told me the truth. That his name was Nicholas not Emmett and he wants that money that my father has left on your name. Because according to the will, Juliette could only pass the will to her husband after the age of thirty. I don't understand my father had planned such a will but it was clear that Nicholas wanted the money and he would go up to any extent to get it. But for that he needed to marry you and wait until you reach thirty for him to get the money. But there was a twist!" dad said and I stared at him waiting for him to complete.

"The twist was the will had this clause which said: 'If something happened to the will holder, her/his possessions will automatically be given to the one on whom the will holder has made the nominee.' It maybe her husband, father, mother, brother but only relative to the will holder."

"So, it was clear that Nicholas wanted the money and only because of that he had planned to marry you and after marriage he planned to get the possessions to himself. I stood against this. I threatened him that I will unveil his identity to you. Do you who stood up for him and threatened to kill my family? It was his father. I came to know that Vito was his father. Vito Greer was Nicholas Greer's father and all this was his plans to get the money. He threatened that he would kill Jace and your mom Jessica if I dared to open my mouth before you. I was helpless! I am sorry Juliette" tears fell from his eyes as he lowered his head leaving my hand and he wiped his tears.

"Dad!" I said slowly.

"You had no idea about what was going on and that is when all of a sudden you came up to me telling me that Emmett proposed you and you two decided to get married. I was devastated. I was letting it happen. Everything was before me but I couldn't do anything. I was failing from saving my own daughter" he sobbed and tears fell down from my eyes. I couldn't believe how stupid I was. How did I even fall in love with a fake person? Dad had to go through all this because of me.

"I wanted to save you. I wanted to save my whole family desperately and you know 'A drowning man will clutch at a straw' I did that to save mine and my family" he said and that strike me.

"Bu- But why did Emmett chose to hide his identity from me? Why did he not tell me his real name? It was not as if I knew him so why Emmett over Nicholas?" I asked the question which has been nagging me from the beginning.

"He wasn't hiding his identity from you," dad said and that made me even more confused than I already was.

"Then from whom was he hiding?" I asked and looked behind me towards Zachary.

"This is when Mr. Zachary enters," he said and I looked back at Zachary to find him filling a glass of water from the jug for himself. He didn't even look at us. I turned back to dad and looked at him confused.

"My my sources, I got know that Nicholas was a married man," dad said and that gave me a mini heart attack.

"What?" I stood up from my seat in anger.

"Juliette! Listen to me, dear. Please sit down" dad said and took me some minutes to calm myself before I sat back on the couch.

"Not only married but he even killed his pregnant wife," dad said in rage and something strikes my mind.

That reminded me of those conversations of Zachary's men which I overheard beforehand when I was trying to escape.

"His wife is Zachary's sister," I said slowly and we heard a loud crash and I looked back to find the jug of water on the ground. Zachary threw it angrily on the ground and rubbed his face.

"Excuse me!" he said as he came back and took a seat back on the sofa.

I was just going to open my mouth when dad interfered continuing "So, I got to know that he was hiding his identity from Mr. Zachary Sullivan and Mr. Zachary was in search of him because he had killed his sister. That was my 'A drowning man clutches a straw.' I got in contact with him and told everything about Nicholas. But the problem was Vito. Vito is the

mastermind in all this. He was the one after whom Mr. Zachary was. It was his plans to kill his own daughter-of-law. I don't know why he planned to kill her and he used his own son a pawn. Nicholas was just a pawn in this game. All Vito wanted was money. He wanted it from you, Mr. Zachary's sister. And we knew that he would go to any extent to get the money. For that we, Mr. Zachary and I made a plan. The plan had you getting married to Mr. Zachary. We had a deal that until Vito and Nicholas is taken care of and out of the game, we would protect you. Because Mr. Zachary wanted Vito and Vito wanted you. In order to reach Vito it was necessary for you to be with him. If you got married to Mr. Zachary your will and life is saved. So, that's what we di-" I cut him off this time.

"So everything was an act? The marriage and being held away from home was a plan?" I asked o which dad nodded a 'yes' slowly.

"We had a deal, Juliette! Don't worry!" dad said all of a sudden his face lit up.

"Deal?" I asked.

"Mr. Zachary has promised that he would protect you from Vito and Nicholas and he will even end this marriage once they are out of this game" dad finished and looked at Zachary smiling at him.

"End this marriage" I muttered to myself.

"Oh, Juliette I know this is all messed up but trust me Mr. Zachary will protect you because we have a deal. I know you don't have any wish to stay in this marriage and neither Mr. Zachary has any wish for the same. He will free you after Vito is in his hands" dad said and I stared at him blankly.

What is wrong with me?

"I know this is hard for you but princess please let us take care of you. Please hold up for more days until Vito is captured. He will no longer be able to hurt our family" dad said while I sat there quietly.

"What do you say? Juliette? Say something!" dad said squeezing my hand.

"What will I say? You both have made every decision by yourself and we have reached this far. Do whatever is appropriate" I said as I got up from the seat and walked across the room to the window.

"Juli-" dad was cut off by Zachary.

"Mr. Swason! I think it is enough for today. You traveled all this way here. You need rest. Let Cosmina take you to the penthouse where you could take some rest and you can join us in our house when Mrs. Swanson and Mr. Jace arrives" Zachary told him and I heard when he dialed Cosmina. Their conversation didn't reach my ears as I was busy sorting out the wrong pieces of

my filthy life. I stood there looking out of the glass window. Tears spill down my eyes like a stream. I cursed for having such a fate.

All of a sudden I came to know that my dead grandfather has left a will on my name, and the money is wanted by my ex-fake fiancé. My so called present husband whom I thought until yesterday is the one who is going to hurt me came out to be the one who has always tried to protect me. My own father had secrets from me and me, I am so stupid to fall head over heels with a fake greedy person.

I am the sole reason of my downfall. Nobody is to be blamed for it. It all happened because of me. How could I be so blind in love that I didn't even notice the worried face of my father and the greedy face of my lover?

I guess this is life and my marriage is just a business deal.

Chapter 38

Juliette Pov

“So you knew everything!” I said while Zachary drove us back to his mansion.

As I had expected. No reply from his side. He must be thinking, I am so stupid. He must be laughing at my fate internally. It’s not even his fault. Who wouldn’t laugh at me?

What a life I have. Amazing! Had I ever imagined my life to be so messed up ever? What I had thought and what has happened, totally no control over my life. All I have been doing is crying. Why did I even let this happen to me at the first place? This is only because of me. I should have been more cautious. I should have been more guarded about the things that had been happening around me. How could I not see worried eyes of my parents? Why did I not get the hint when dad told me that he didn’t really like Emmett? Everyone was so right about Emmett that he didn’t seem a good person to them. Why was I the only blind one?

I sighed rubbing the bridge of my nose in aggravation. My state has been worsening day by day and I didn’t really blame anyone but me. But what dad has done, I can’t really ignore it. Sure, he did it for me for our family but he took every decision by himself. He even took my life’s decision. We could have done something else. What am I even talking about?

Why? Just why am I the only person in the world to have such a complicated life?

I have been punishing, cursing myself since I have come to know about Nicholas. Why am I even cursing myself?

The car came to a halt and I looked at Zachary before looking around.

“I thought we were going home!” I told him when he began to undo his seatbelt.

“Come out!” he told me before he got out of the car. I sighed and shook my head. If anything I wanted at the moment then it was to go back home. What does he even want now?

Getting out of the car I looked around. It was a gas station. He locked the car and walked towards the ‘in and out’ store. I followed him not knowing what to do. We walked inside the store and I watched as he directly walked towards the freeze and brought out two ice-cream sticks.

“They only have the bars,” he said as he handed me one choco bar ice-cream.

Before I could even open my mouth to say something he walked crossing me towards the counter to pay for the ice-cream. I looked back at the ice-cream and instantly a smile crept up my face and I looked at him and as always he was already looking at me eating from his stick.

This man...

Getting rid of the pack, I ate mine and turned around facing the freeze not wanting to let him see me smiling. I was still smiling. I didn't even know the reason why I was smiling. Oh my god! Was I going crazy?

But then I recalled what dad told me.

"Mr. Zachary has promised that he would protect you from Vito and Nicholas and he will even end this marriage once they are out of this game."

"So I am with him until he gets Vito in his hands? That means I can get back to my previous life. Can I forget everything?" I spoke to myself. I was so busy chatting up with myself that I didn't even feel the presence beside me.

"Will you eat the stick?" he said and that made me jerk out of my thoughts.

"You are so foolish!" he said as he took the stick away from me and threw it into the dustbin.

While he extended his hand to hand me the tissue paper, I couldn't hold myself from blurting out "You are right! I am foolish!" I said as I took the paper from him and wiped my fingers before throwing it into the dustbin.

I turned to look back at him to find him glaring at me.

"What?" I asked startled by his expression.

"Nothing! Let's get back to the house" he said and without even letting me speak he walked out of the store. I looked at his retreating back from inside the store" glass window.

"Bipolar much!" I said and ran out of the store following. I even tripped on my place and all he did was to glare at me. His eyeballs would fall off his sockets one day if he continued glaring at me every single day.

"Every single day" I muttered to myself. It is not as if I was going to stay with him for every day. Probably, as soon as he gets his hands on Vito he would send me back to my family. Why would he even want to stay with me? All he is says about me is 'I am an idiot', ' I am foolish' that's all. Why wouldn't he send me back to my family? And as if I want to live with him.

"Whoever wants to live with this Mr. Grumpy pants?" I said at loud and bit the inner side of my mouth when I realized what I just did. Slowly when I looked back at him, I found him looking at me with a neutral look.

"Hmm well, that's something new. He isn't even angry" I thought when he put his seat belts on and I did the same.

"Okay! I take it back! I am sorry" I shrieked in my seat when he took a turn almost throwing me out of the window. Luckily I had the glass of the window rolled up and I had my seat belts on. If I hadn't then God only knows what would have happened to me. Thanks to the modern world,

especially to that God like Engineer who thought of making these seat belts. I guess he knew that people like Zachary exist in this cruel world.

“Will you slow doowwwwnnnn ahh-” I screamed when he took a deadly turn just before a truck.

“Thank you mother, Mary, for saving me, ” I said once we were away from the truck.

“Slow down you idiot!” I snapped at him and thankfully after ten minutes of the torturous ride, the car stopped before the mansion’s gate.

“You idiot!” I snapped as I jumped out of the car and slammed the door shut. The guard who opened the gate looked at me and then at Zachary who was still inside the car looking at me smugly.

“Asshole! Who taught you how to drive?” I screamed and all he did was smirk at me.

The window rolled down and I crossed my arms across my chest as I bent down to look at him.

“Walk back to the house!” he said and before I could get in or punch his face he drove passing a baffled looking guard inside the mansion.

“Zachary! You douche!” I ran after him.

Surely he made me walk back to the mansion. It was probably two kilometer, probably. He even mocked me by stopping the car in the middle and honking the car. When I tried to run and catch up, he would put his foot on the accelerator and would speed up.

“Asshole!”

I huffed out air and wiped the beads of sweat that formed in my forehead. I am going to kill him today. How dare he abandon me in the middle. On reaching the front side of the mansion entrance, I spotted the car.

“Where is that monkey?” I yelled on the top of my lungs wanting him to hear me. He should know that he was going to die. At least he can’t blame me that I didn’t warn him.

“Zachary!” I ran once I spotted him leaning casually against the door of the mansion.

As soon as he saw me he ran towards the lawn.

“Where do you think you are going?” I snapped running after him. It was really difficult to run with those heels on but at the moment all I wanted to do was to kill him.

“I am telling you! No! warning you! Stop righ-” I stopped and panted before continuing “right there!”

“Zachary!” I took a small vase from the side and ran after him wanting to bang it on his head.

“What the fuck do you think you are doing? Keep that down you idiot!” he yelled still running away from me.

The nerve of this man.

“Stop calling me an idiot!” I snapped and ran to the table where he tried to avoid getting caught by running circle it.

“Then what should I call an idiot?” he asked mocking me making an innocent face.

“Oh, I will tell you. Come here!” I snapped and then he ran towards the other side of the lawn. He wasn’t even running. It was as if he was jogging. I cursed God for giving me short and thin limbs. How I wished to have limbs like Mr. Usain Bolt. Then it would be so easy to sprint and catch the monkey of a Zachary.

I didn’t even realize when I tripped and I lost my balance throwing the vase in the air. I stumbled and limping on my foot I felt myself falling to my side. Everything happened in a slow motion. I even saw Zachary making an attempt to hold me but it was late. Too late.

Splash!

I fell directly into that fountain. Water filled up my nose and my mouth as I felt my body twisting in an odd position inside the fountain. When I tried to get up, I tripped again because of my heels and fell faceplant inside the fountain and then everything blacked out.

I blinked several times before I felt my eyes open. Everything was a blur for some seconds before my eyes adjusted themselves to the light and I held my head which was throbbing painfully.

“Ugh! What happened?” I heard my own voice and looked to the side find a woman sitting on the bedside smiling down at me.

“You fell into the fountain and hit your head. You head a concussion” she said and I watched as she removed the pressure belt from my arm.

“It’s alright! Nothing much to worry Mr. Sullivan” she said while she checked my eyes and I looked to the side to find Zachary standing next to the mirror looking at us.

“Thankyou doctor, for getting here on short notice,” Zachary told her and she smiled. Both of them shook their hands and Zachary walked her out of the room.

While they were out I managed to sit up and I leaned against the headboard holding the side of my throbbing head.

“Ow!” I flinched when I touched the part where I hit my head accidentally.

I watched as he ‘the devil himself’ walked inside the room. He had changed himself into a white t-shirt ad black jeans. He took a seat on the chair right next to my bed. I thought he was going

to snap at me telling me 'How stupid or foolish I was' but to my extreme shock, I watched as the sides of his eyes wrinkled up and he brown dull eyes lit up before he threw his head back and laughed at loudly.

"Wha-" words didn't even form in my mouth when I saw him laughing for the first time ever since the day I have met him. His laughter echoed in the room as I gawked at him. My face heated up and I knew I was blushing embarrassed because I had always somehow managed to make a fool out of myself before him.

"St- Stop!" I managed to mumble. This only made him laugh even more.

"Shut up!" I took the pillow and hit him. He got hold of the pillow still laughing hard. "I can't believe this! You fell into that fountain and you even blacked out! Not only clumsy but you are a" he laughed again and I tried to hide my face at the same time as I tried to pull the pillow away from him "But you are a delicate darling too!" he completed and got off the chair letting me take the pillow.

"It all happened because of you! Shut up!" I hit him with the pillow. His masculine laughter filling my ears which got my skin a tingling sensation. I was embarrassed, I knew it.

That is when my eyes fell on the clothes that I was wearing. I was wearing my night suit. Who changed me into these?

That made me jerk off out of my thoughts.

"Who changed me into this?" I questioned as I threw the pillow next to me. Thankfully he stopped laughing wiping the sides of his eyes and looked down at me.

"What?" he asked amused.

"WHO CHANGED ME INTO THIS?" I asked enunciating each word.

He bent down until he reached my eye level and smirked. "Oh, I don't know! Maybe me?" he said smugly when he saw my startled expression. Before I could hit him he laughed and practically ran out of the room.

"What the hell you monkey?" I yelled after him.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 39

Juliette Pov

"Talk about shit!" I threw my hands up in the air irritated. Thankfully, I got to know that one of Zachary's maid changed my clothes after that tragic fall in that stupid fountain. But that monkey of a man had to just play with me and my poor mind claiming that he was the one who changed my clothes. I asked him the whole day yesterday about who changed my clothes, and all he did was mock me, glare at me, ignore me, type on his laptop and phone, at one point he had the guts to even shove me out of his stupid study room. I even banged few times on his door because he locked it from the inside claiming that 'I was irritating him!' I mean how the hell was I irritating him when he was the one who was irritating me?

I asked a simple question "Who changed my clothes?"

Answer the question and I would have been in my way and him in his. But no, he had to make it complicated or else the food he ate will not easily digest not until he annoys me.

"Why ask the silly question?" was his outraged statement and I was like "Excuse me? It's about a women's dignity! duh!"

Finally, after pacing around I met this lady in the hall mopping and cleaning the floor. I wouldn't have known if she hadn't asked me about 'How I was? and if I wanted something.'

Then only I asked her and she told me that she was asked by the monkey of a man to change my clothes because he went to fetch the doctor to the mansion's entrance gate. I took a sigh of relief when I heard about it. Thank God!

I would have killed if only he didn't leave me alone in the house all alone by myself the whole evening and night. He didn't even find it important to tell me that he will be leaving or he will not be there in the house the whole evening. It is awkward to be like a ghost wandering around in a big house with no people around. The maids were back to their quarters leaving a poor little soul alone in the big house. Even the bedroom where I sleep is so big that I preferred covering my head with a blanket fearing about the impossibilities of ghosts watching me sleep.

I mean "You never know!"

Here I am early in the morning with my wet hair, water still dripping out because of the shower I took for my hair was smelling like a dead rat because I felt into that fountain which had algae like substance and it kind of stuck in my hair. So, I had to shampoo my hair even if I didn't want to. All of a sudden I felt hungry and that was the reason I woke up early in the morning with a rumbling stomach and hence decided to take a shower and make my own food as no maids come early in the morning. I looked at the clock to find it 7 in the morning.

I decided to eat bread and butter for the breakfast. I wasn't really good in cooking but I could make the basics at least to feed myself. I kept the bread on the kitchen counter and searched for the butter in the fridge. As I was new to the things and place, it was difficult for me to find all the things easily. Most of the time, I had to ask the maids if I wanted anything.

First, I thought I would eat bread and butter but when my eyes fell on the toaster I thought about toasting it. So, I took the bread and inserted it inside the toaster and waited for the toaster to give me my bread. Till it gets toasted I thought about searching anything else in the fridge.

"Well, a sight to behold!" I jumped in fear but took a sigh of relief when I saw who it was.

"Zachary! Will you stop scaring me like that? You just caught me off guard!" I said as I walked to the fridge and took the jug of milk out and kept it on the table.

"Might I drink some milk!" I thought as I searched for the glass.

I was searching for it when Zachary walked into the kitchen and went past me to a cupboard. From, there he took a glass out and kept it beside the milk jug and looked back at me.

He looked tired as if he didn't sleep the whole night. He was wearing the same clothes from yesterday. His hair was messy and his sleeves were rolled up which was an unusual sight for me because from the day I have been with him, I have seen him dress into perfection and I had actually assumed that he was from that type pf person who dresses up perfectly every single time of the day.

I heard a noise and saw the bread pop up from the toaster. Before I could take it out, Zachary took it out and kept it on a plate and inserted another one into the toaster.

"You are hungry? Already?" he looked at his watch "At this time of the day?" he asked and then without letting me speak he continued "You should have called the maids using the staff phone," he said as he crossed his arms across his chest and narrowed his eyes at me. His brown eyes pierced into mine as if he was looking directly into my soul.

"Because for the dumbest human like you, you never know!" he said and that literally brought back to reality.

"Dumbest? Excuse me?" I glared at me.

"What if you burn the kitchen down?" he said smirking at the end and looked at the toaster when the bread pop up.

"Well for your kind information I can cook!" I told him and crossed my arms across my chest.

"Really?" he said as he took another bread and put it into the toaster.

"Yes. Yes! I know all the basics. I can at least feed myself!" I told him and walked next to him and took the plate from before him and taking the knife I started applying the butter over it.

I stopped when I heard him chuckle. “What?” I asked.

“Nothing!” he said and I saw him walking to the fridge and he brought the eggs out.

“Wait! I will make you scrambled eggs” he said as he kept the pan on the stove for heating and took the butter away from me. I looked at him as if he had two heads while he beat the egg onto the hot pan.

He can cook?

“What?” he asked when he caught me staring.

“Who taught you how to cook?” I asked and a sly smile appeared on his face as he chose to ignore my question and concentrated on the eggs. Leaning against the kitchen platform I watched as he sprinkled salt over it and stirred it on the pan.

The egg looked nice, it even smelled nice and I felt my mouth salivating looking at it. I was really hungry.

“Here! Just serve it in two plates. I will just take make some coffee” he said and went to fetch the coffee powder from the cupboard. I admired his cooking skills and did what he asked. Taking two plates, which I assumed that another one for him I served the eggs and took the bread and to the table. At this point, my stomach was growling like a hungry tiger.

“Oh my god!” I inhaled the aroma of the coffee when Zachary place the cup of coffee before me.

I pushed my wet hair to the left side of my shoulder and sat on the chair as Zachary took a seat before me. Taking a piece of bread into my mouth, and a spoonful of scrambled egg into my mouth.

“Heaven,” I thought as I chewed enjoying the delicious breakfast savoring each bite of it. I was so busy eating mine food that I didn’t notice the piercing stare that I was getting right from the person who was sitting right before me. When I felt the stare, and I looked up at him with my mouth stuffed with my food to find him drinking from his coffee mug and staring at me. He knew that I caught him staring still, he didn’t pry his eyes away from my direction. I chewed my food which was in my mouth slowly thinking why was he staring at me.

What did I do now?

I followed his eyes and it was directed to my hair. What’s so interesting about my hair? It’s just damp now. Okay! Because I just took a shower and I was wearing a purple tank top with black leggings.

“Is there something on my face?” I asked once I swallowed my food.

He looked back at me and as if he was reluctant he shook his head ‘no’. With a small sigh, he took a bite of his food and I concentrated on mine.

“Frumoasă” I heard him mumble.

“What?” I asked confused whether I heard something or not.

“Eat your food!” he said and though I wanted to shove my spoon on his face, I gave him a sarcastic smile and ate my food.

“I set Nicholas free!” all of a sudden I heard him speak while I was sipping my coffee. I choked on my coffee and coughed a little before looking straight into his eyes.

“What?” I asked perplexed by his words.

“I let go of Nicholas yesterday,” he said looking straight into my eyes. I blinked several times and averted my gaze away from him.

“Oh!” I said as I kept the coffee mug on the table and trailed my finger on the rim of the mug.

“Will you not ask me any questions regarding Nicholas?” he asked and my head shot up to his direction.

He wants me to ask him about Nicholas?

“Do you want me to ask you?” I questioned back. All of a sudden a statement from my father came rushing into my mind. I clenched my jaw and put my left hand on my knees to hide it from Zachary. Something miffed me off and for that my left hand clenched into a tight fist as I looked straight into his brown orbs.

“I will answer your questions!” he said which made me avert my eyes away from him.

“You don’t need to worry about Nicholas. I have people watching his moves. We hope he will take us to Vito. And if you are worried about your safety than you don’t need to think about that. He can’t harm you, I will ensure tha-”

“Are you my bodyguard?” I questioned glaring at him.

“Pardon?” he narrowed his eyes.

“I no longer care about what Nicholas or Emmett whatever his name is doing or what he wants. It is a request from me, I will be grateful if you keep me away from all these. I don’t want to hear anything about him. You can do whatever you want with him. So please?” I asked and watched as he balled his fists on the table and his jaws clenched but he nodded yes.

“Fine! I respect your decisions. I won’t involve you in all this any further” he said and I nodded appreciating that he understood my decisions.

Nicholas! His name itself wants me to kill someone. Not only did he broke my trust but that man has the audacity to try harming my family. Sick man! He was the worst mistake that I did in my life. I hate myself for ever falling in love with that bastard. I still can’t believe that my

world tumbled upside down these past few days after I got to know about his identity and his motive behind that fake identity.

It was a moment of silence between us when we chose to silently sip our coffee not even looking up at each other. My mood changed into a foul one because of Nicholas. I just hope Zachary takes care of all this and keeps me out of all this. I don't want to get involved in Zachary's criminal lifestyle nor do I want to do anything with Nicholas anymore. He is dead for me now.

That reminds of my father's statement and I couldn't help but ask "You said you will answer my questions."

He looked up at me and nodded with a slight hesitancy.

"So, once all this is all sort out, I mean you get your revenge from Nicholas and Vito, will you let me go back to my family? I mean I can go back and resume my old life?" I asked and saw something flickering in his eyes. I couldn't quite recognize it whether it was anger or sadness.

"Of course!" he said with a smile which almost made me feel as if it was a fake one but judging from his expressions and the situation of our lives, I highly doubted that it was a fake smile but rather it was a happy one that he would be freed from me. I mean of course I was a burden for him because he had to protect me and at the same time act before his family as if we are a happily married couple. He would be more than ecstatic to let go of me. The question is does it even matters? Because both of us know this, we are far from anything but a happily married couple. 'Married' only by a deal.

"Great!" I muttered.

So why does it affects me all of a sudden that he wants me to go away? I mean I should be happy because a couple of days ago I was the one who wanted desperately to get away from him. So, how did all the feelings changed all of a sudden? Our feelings to separate and go our own ways should be mutual. I hope this Vito guy to be captured by him as soon as possible because the soon he is captured the soon all this will be over.

"What am I even thinking?" I mumbled to myself and watched as he looked my way with a questioning look to which I gave him a shrug and shook my head saying a small "nothing!"

I sat on the balcony's chair as I looked up into the sky blankly, my mind void of any thoughts. I was confused with what was going on in my life. The only thing that came into my mind was what would I be doing after I can go back home. Should I be excited? Should I make a list of things that I will be doing once I am free?

All of a sudden something fell on my lap and I jerked out of my blank state to look at the object on my lap. Zachary sat on the chair next to mine while I couldn't help but glare at him.

"How many times do I need to tell you? Don't scare me like that!" I complained.

“Whatever!” he rolled his eyes and took the newspaper that he brought and began reading it making himself comfortable on his chair.

I looked down on my lap to find a small bag and I opened it only to gasp.

“A phone?” I asked as I looked at the box and then open the box.

“An iPhone!” I smiled and looked at him.

“You are giving me a phone?” I asked smiling at him.

“No! Look at it carefully. It’s a mosquito!” as always was his sarcastic reply which instantly smacked the smile out of my face. I didn’t quarrel with him though. Taking the brand new phone out of the box I switched it on. A smiled remained plastered on my face whIe I tried to figure out its features.

“Now that you know everything I hope you don’t try to run or escape like the last time,” he said and I nodded unattentively.

“What?” I asked once I realized I wasn’t paying attention.

“Nevermind!” he said and got back to reading his newspaper.

“What is your number?” I asked excitedly to him once I checked the contact list and found it empty. After saving everyone’s number that I remembered like dad, Kiara, Jace and mom I thought about saving Zachary’s number too. I mean why not? He brought me the phone, after all, and he is my husba...

“You want to save my number?” he asked with a raised eyebrow.

“Why not?” I questioned.

He sighed and took the phone from me and dialed his number before saving it and handing it back to me.

I scrolled over wanting to see what he did only to gasp seeing the name that he saved.

“My heartbeat?” I questioned gritting my teeth in annoyance.

“Classic?” he smirked raising an eyebrow.

“Oh very!” I replied with a sarcastic smile of my own.

Such a jerk!

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 40

Zachary Pov

“Sir Mr. Stephen has left the penthouse in a hurry. I tried to stop him but he said it’s urgent and he took the next plane back home,” Cosmina told me while I got up from the bed and looked back at a sleeping Juliette who faced the other side with her left hand on the bed on the pillow, while the other was on the back of her head while she slept on her belly. That’s an uncomfortable position...

“I know! He had informed me about the last night” I said I sat on the recliner that Juliette had chosen from that furniture shop. And honestly, I love this recliner. Why did I not ever think about bringing one home earlier? It relaxes me so much that whenever I wake up in the morning or whenever I am tired I have grown used to sit on this recliner.

“Oh! Foarte bine (Very well). He just called me some minutes ago and told me to inform you.” she said and my eyes averted to Juliette who stirred in her sleep and sleepily covered herself using the duvet.

“Hmm. It’s early in the morning. You did your job very well but now you can sleep. I will not be coming to the office today! If you want you can take the day off too. If you do so, make sure to inform Marc. He will handle everything,” I said and looked at the time to find its four in the morning.

“Oh! Thank you, sir! Yes, I will do that” she said sounding grateful. We hung up and I kept my mobile on the side as I raised my left leg and kept in on my right knee. Juliette’s father told me yesterday that he had to leave for some urgent thing and he will be back within the week with his family. Out of the all the people in Juliette’s family, only a few has the idea about what has been going on in Juliette’s life. Juliette’s mother Jessica knows everything and I think they have told only a few parts about Emmett being Nicholas to Jace and Juliette’s friend.

That reminds me of that Nicholas.

Not caring what time it was, I dialed Max’s number. He picked up after just two rings speaking or might I say whispering “Hello?”

“Where are you?” I asked after a moment of pause.

“Oh! Boss!” suddenly I heard shuffling in the background and then he spoke, “Yes Boss!”

“I am in my home now,” he answered but again he was back at whispering.

“I want to know about Nicholas’s whereabouts. Is your man doing the work properly?” I asked.

“Yes, Boss! He is constantly reporting me about Nicholas’s whereabout. Last time I checked that he took a flight to Afghanistan and he checked into a hotel in Kabul. My people has been

sending me his photos and even his movements. So, far he has not tried to contact his father" Max spoke and I nodded chewing the inner lip thinking what is he up to?

Nicholas took a flight to Afghanistan and yet he had not tried to contact his father. Why not? Does he know that someone is following him or marking his movements? Or is he not contacting Vito because...

"Tell your men to have their eyes on the people that he met. Let that be a woman or even an old man. Inform me everything! even if it's a child!" I said scratching my chin thinking about Nicholas.

"Yess Boss! I will do that!" he whispered.

"Why are you whispering?" I asked all of a sudden wanting to know why was he acting so weirdly, whispering in his own house. "Umm, I am in my bathroom," he said and that made me raise an eyebrow.

"Baie?" (Bathroom?) I asked.

"My girlfriend is sleeping and she gets irritated whenever I umm I pick up my phone in the middle of the night. So, I walked into the bathroom not to disturb her sleep." he said and I could hear the irritation in his voice. A small smile appeared on my face. I found the situation really funny though.

"Well! Don't disturb your girlfriend then! Sleep well." I said and hung up.

I looked back at Juliette, her back was facing me. "Well, she doesn't complain!" I thought as I kept my phone on a table next to the recliner.

But she isn't your girlfriend!

Actually, that reminds of that day when I cooked for her, just two days ago I was so tired because I had to drive back to the warehouse where I had kept Nicholas in order to set him free and then I had to attend a meeting and after that, I slept in my office exhausted. I intended on just to take a short nap and then I would have been in my car, driving back home because I was aware of the fact that Juliette was left alone in the house but then I was so tired to the point that without even having my dinner I slept on my office's couch. The next day, I woke up early in the morning and straight away drove back home thinking that she must be scared all by herself in the house because her father had told me earlier that she despised living alone. But the moment I saw her in that kitchen wearing that skin fit tank top with her wet hair I literally felt the ground slip beneath my foot as I felt my heartbeat racing against my chest so, I had to balance my body by leaning gainst the open doorframe just to look at her.

She looked beautiful and I even couldn't help those words slip out my tongue and I told it on her face "frumoasa" (beautiful) but thankfully she couldn't get it. It's so frustrating that I have been like this since the day I have started to have all these strange emotions for her. Are this

emotions and feelings related to the fact that I am just trying to protect her from Nicholas or something else?

But whatever it is, I guess she will never like it. Nor will I. I must continue to have all my attention on Vito right now. I am just wandering off my ambitions. But.

She has this effect on me now. I have never been in any relationships nor have I ever dated any woman yet here I am straight away married to a total stranger whom I only knew from a simple plain photo just to had this on my mind that she was Stephen's daughter who would be walking down that aisle for Nicholas and whom I had to marry in order to save her. That was the deal and as soon as I get that Vito in my hand she will be going back home, to her normal life being her normal self. I knew it from the beginning that she despised criminals and I doubt that she ever had this dream to marry a criminal but much to her annoyance she is, she is married to a criminal must I say, to a mafia leader who has this already messed up life of playing two roles, one of being a mafia leader and another of playing a successful businessman.

This is what life has chosen for me. I never really chose this life for me. Who really wants a life like me?

It will be better if she gets back to her own life. She doesn't belong here and nor do I belong in her life. It will be better if she gets back to her life away from all this chaos, weapons and especially from my life because, in the end, she will end up hurt if she doesn't. And judging from her question that day while having her breakfast she did ask me if she could go back. This only indicates that she wants to go back. As much as it gives me an uneasy feeling but I understand that she doesn't want to have anything to do with my life. She even made it clear that day that she clearly has no interest in my life nor has any intention of staying here after all this is over.

I closed my eyes as I leaned against the recliner making myself comfortable.

I was as she stirred in her sleep and turned towards my direction. A mere sight of her does all these things to me. My hands formed into a ball thinking about that. And do I like whatever I was feeling? This woman...

It's been two days since we had breakfast with each other but that fresh, sans of any makeup out of the shower look is still in my mind. Undoubtedly the woman on my bed is beautiful and the fact that she doesn't even realize how beautiful she is which just adds another feather in her cap. I never really thought that she would be mentally this strong to take in about Nicholas, but she proved me wrong and here she is already moved on.

Is she really moved on or is she just trying to act stronger than she is already is?

Whatever it is, but I have no doubt on the fact that the woman before me is not only beautiful but strong and eve brave.

That made me smile for she is the only woman who has the braveness to glare at me. She even speaks of her mind and she even shouts and screams at me which no woman apart from mom and my grandma did to me.

“If you’re done with your phone call then sleep!” came her sleepy yet sultry voice as she pulled the duvet to her neck and snuggled up more to the pillow which I wish it to be me...

“You are awake?” I asked even though I knew she was.

“No, I am asleep. Can’t you see?” she said sarcastically as she opened her eyes and looked at me through those vivid electrifying blue eyes of hers. I smirked thinking that she is unknowingly behaving like me. Out of all my activities, all she learned is how to be sarcastic.

“Yes, I can see!” II said as I got up from the recliner and made my way back to the bed.

“I still don’t understand! Why do you sleep shirtless?” she said as she squinted her eyes shut. I could see those red tint forming on her cheeks which she tried to hide by pulling the duvet over until her cheeks were hidden.

“It’s too hot!” I said as I lay down next to her and turned to her side and put my head over my folded left arm.

“The temperature is so down that my teeth is literally chattering and you call it hot?” she complained snuggling into her duvet.

“Really? Let me help you,” I said as I threw my right arm over her body and her eyes shot open alarmed as I pulled her up against me with the duvet placed between us.

“What are you doing? Move away!” she pushed hard on my chest.

“Move!” she complained.

“No, I’m fine, thank you!” I told her closing my eyes.

“Ugh! You are a jerk!” she said and she slapped me on my arm but as she stopped struggling against me and finally fell into sleep, my eyes opened slowly just to look at that calm face as I slowly let her go and raised my hand to slowly unhide her face from that duvet. Her innocence showed on her sleeping face, the peaceful and serene dreams blocking out the dangers of the outside. The soft breathing making my world seem to stand still as I gazed at every inch of her face drawing an exact picture in my mind which I decided to cherish later when she would be gone.

The strands of her hair falling on the side of her hid her face from me, which I decided to slowly push her hair to the back of her ear by my finger as I trailed my finger on her skin feeling that electrifying sensation against my skin. Her skin was undoubtedly smooth and flawless. My finger trailed her small scar just above her eye right under her eyebrow and it made wonder how she got that scar.

It would be so easy if I never had this life. How much better it would have been if we met in some other situation and in different being.

I sighed thinking that it is of no point to think what is never really possible because what is before us is our real life and we had to live it whether we want it or not.

“Frumoasa,” (beautiful) I heard my own voice as I complimented the woman right before my eyes as she slept next to me carefree about the world.

I turned around away from her face because I knew it was the best. I should turn away when I can because if I don’t then it would be too late to cope up with my new feelings that are seemingly growing every day for the woman behind me. And it scares me that eve if I deny it, I knew exactly what those feelings are. And I shouldn’t complain when I say whatever I’m doing to is best for both of us.

As I closed my eyes and snuggled into my pillow feeling my eyelids growing heavy due to sleep, my eyes it shot back open as I felt those cold yet fragile arm circling over my torso and I felt as she snuggled up against my back pulling me closer.

“No! Don’t turn around!” my brain warned me and I chose to listen to my brain, I didn’t turn around because I knew if I did then I would go weak. I would fail to keep my emotions at bay and I would definitely break.

I pulled the duvet over us and rested my head back on the pillow as I tried to sleep once again with her hand over me. Unintentionally, I grabbed her hand and intertwined our fingers as I fell into deep slumber saddened thinking that it is just a wonderful dream which will soon diminish into all those wonderful and beautiful dreams that my brain had shown me once. What shall be left is only memories. Painful and saddened memories.

“What is this?” she asked as she opened the bag that I brought for her. She looked through it as I tied my tie and looked at her activities through the mirror.

“A dress?” she smiled as she unfolds the beige colored high hem and low v-neck sequin dress and lifted it up to look at it.

“For you to wear for today’s party,” I told her and before she could find me already looking at her, I averted my gaze away from her and lowered my head to look at my tie. I was ready for my office as I wore a gray Armani suit with white underneath shirt.

“I will be wearing this for your award function?” she asked with a hint of fear which made me look back at her immediately as I narrowed my eyes at her thinking what she meant and why is she scared.

“Yes! it’s a couture that Cosmina chose for you for today’s award function” I told her walking towards the wardrobe.

“Liar! You chose it for her” my brain mocked me which I ignored. It was true though. I sat for hours in the showroom searching for a dress which would flaunt her skin and I wanted to see her figure once again which I had witnessed when she wore that bodycon dress when she fell in that fountain. Hilarious day of my life.

“But I- I uh” she stuttered looking uncomfortable.

“You what?”

“I have never worn this uh this- um it’s too short” she bit down on her lower lip as she looked at the dress that she was holding.

“Whether you wear it for the party or not is totally your wish. Cosmina told me to give it to you for the party. You can always wear whatever you want” I said when she looked up at me.

Please wear it...

I will be picking you up before seven or be ready by that time. And Cosmina has also arranged a beautician to help you get ready for the function. She will be arriving her before five. Turn on your phone. Call me if you need anything else,” I said and without even looking her way I made my way out of the room.

She can wear whatever she wants.

The whole day, I remained busy with my legal work of my real estate business. Today was certainly the day of my life as I was again nominated for the ‘Businessman of the year’ for the third time. People were enthusiastic to see my wife, as the paparazzi has already flaunted and left no stones unturned to spread the news about me getting married secretively. People wants to see that woman whom they will know as my wife. I went to that showroom especially for Juliette because I wanted to make sure that she looks the best in the award function. Everyone hopes that!

By the time, it was evening when I Iooked at my watch to find its already six in the evening. I got up from my table and shut down my laptop. Cosmina must have already left for getting ready for the function.

Along with Juliette, me too have to look best in the function. We were the newlyweds after all! Everyone’s eyes will be over us today and I made sure to get ready in the most expensive and sophisticated suit for the function.

In the mansion, I hurried my way into the bedroom and looked around not able to find Juliette.

“Oh, my!” I heard a lady when I turned around towards the bathroom.

“Good evening Sir!” the middle-aged lady whom I recognized as the beautician that Cosmina had appointed for Juliette standing near the door of the bathroom holding her cosmetic bag.

“Where is Juliette?” I asked the lady and looked behind her towards the bathroom’s door thinking she must be inside.

“She is downstairs, in the kitchen,” she said as she held the strap of the cosmetic bag on between her finger.

“I was just about to leave.” she bowed and walked out of the bedroom door.

I sighed as I got rid of my jacket and went inside the bathroom for a quick shower and to shave. After I was done, I set my hair by combing it into a sleek backward hairstyle and wore my black Emporio Armani tuxedo for the function following with a Cartier Rotonde de Cartier Astrotourbillon watch and black Gordon Rush shoes. After I was done, I applied my favorite Straight to Heaven by Kilian cologne which has a woody and mixes up but most importantly has this rum fragrance. After I was done, I took my wallet and signed some cheques for the charity before putting it inside an envelope and picking up my phone, and walking downstairs.

I checked the time to find its already fifteen minutes left to seven in the evening. So, speeding up my pace I walked inside the Kitchen to find her drinking water from a glass.

She was wearing the dress that I heard brought for her. The dress fitted her as I had imagined and she matched it up with a studded beige stiletto. Her hair was left down as I had asked Cosmina to inform the beautician and with a minimal makeup as if her face was sans of any makeup but with thickened eyebrows and eyelashes. I couldn’t really see the front part as she was standing with her side facing me.

But then, she kept the empty glass on the kitchen counter and then everything happened like slow motion for me. She wiped those luscious pink lips and then turned towards me only to catch me off guard that I practically tripped on my own foot and I stumbled before I held the open doorframe to stop myself from making a fool out pf myself before her. Damn!

The low neckline made me see her cleavage enough and ready to tease me the whole evening and I cursed for even bringing that dress for her because now not only me but many wolves like men will also see what was only meant for me...

She took my breath away. Her long slender toned legs didn’t help.

I held the back of my neck feeling it sweaty.Funny! I just took a shower and here I am feeling hot. I looked behind me and then back at her cursing under my breath thinking I have dug my own grave. What was I thinking when I chose that dress?

“Oh, you are here already?” I heard her voice.

She smiled at me.

Why do you need to smile at me?

And then she walked towards me tossing her hair to the side.

Why do you have to play with your hair before me?

“And you are ready! So, do I! Let’s go?” she asked stopping right before me. My nostrils flaring up to sniff that lavender fragrance of hers which immediately calmed my mood but then realising it I tensed up even further. Oh no!

“Zachary?” she snapped her fingers before me to snap me out of my thoughts.

“Let’s go?” she asked and then smiled batting her eyes signaling her attire. Perhaps, she wanted to know how she looked in that dress.

I cleared up my throat and nodded “Yes! Let’s go!” I said and turned up my back against her and although I knew that it would only make her feel hurt that I ignored but in truth, I was saving myself. How can I answer and compliment how she looks, when I myself doesn’t know that whether it’s the dress that compliments her or was it her body who complimented that dress.

As the chauffeur stood by the car and opened the door for me, I noticed how his eyes looked towards Juliette who was right behind me.

Perhaps someone had a wish to lose his jobs.

The chauffeur turned wide eyes with a pink cheek to look at me glaring at him which caught him off-guard. He adjusted his cap and lowered his head. I allowed Juliette to went past me and go inside the car first, before me. She said a quiet and polite ‘Thank you’ to the chauffeur who smiled in response with his cheeks growing even redder.

Shoot him right here.

Shooting daggers his way I went inside and he closed the door and hopped in the driver seat to drive.

“Zachary you didn’t tell me how do I look?” she whispered to me when we drove off to the venue.

I looked at her when I felt my hands forming into a ball.

“You look just fine!” and then I looked out of the window.

“Wear whatever you want” I mocked myself thinking what I told her earlier when I handed over the dress to her in the morning.

She wore it! Be happy! Why are you sulking now?

“Oh” I heard her saddened and disappointed voice.

“Well done Zachary. Well done. Are you sure that award you are expecting is for the businessman of the year? or is that for best jerk of the year?” my inner self mocked me while I looked back at Juliette who sat quietly looking outside of the window. I put my fist in my mouth and hit my thigh hard continuously by the other thinking what I have done.

Xxxx

Chapter 41

Juliette POV

The mirror reflected my conscious self as I looked into myself into the mirror dressed in a dress that Zachary or should I say Cosmina has chosen for me. I never really thought that Cosmina would ever choose a dress this short for me. Zachary could have taken me with him and I could have chosen a dress for myself but here I am wearing a dress which was too short for my liking. The dress barely covered my thigh, yet as I looked into the mirror to see a different me. I wonder what Kiara would have thought seeing me in this type of dress. She was the only one in this world who always complained about my dressing style. I bet sh would have been happy if she ever saw me in this dress.

That reminds me of what Zachary told me in the morning.

“Whether you wear it for the party or not is totally your wish. Cosmina told me to give it to you for the party. You can always wear whatever you want”.

Why does he always needs to be so rude? I just told him that I had never worn a short dress like this. But, he had to be so rude. I don’t even understand what I did. But then, Cosmina brought this dress for me and they both chose this dress for me, and it’s an award function, so I guess I don’t have any other choice. I don’t really want to upset him today. It’s a great day for him after all. I just hope he wins. Because, as long as I have been with him I have got to know that he never mixes up his legal life with illegal ones. He works day and night for his day business and I really think that he deserves the award.

As I looked back at myself I can’t help but feel conscious about myself. True, I did look different. Bold! But I wanted to know what Zachary thought about it. Will he like it? Will I get to hear my first ever compliment from him?

I smiled at myself and hit the side of my forehead with my knuckle lightly.

“You look absolutely gorgeous” Elena, the beautician whom Cosmina appointed for me told me as she set my hair.

“It all because of you Elena. Truly speaking, I really never thought that I could ever look like this,” I said as I turned around to look at myself in the mirror.

“Nah! Everything looks good on a beautiful person. It’s just you not my makeup nor the dress. The clothes just enhance your beauty nothing else.”

I smiled at what she said and gave her a tight hug. She laughed and patted on my back before letting me go.

“It’s already half past six, I think Sir will be here anytime soon! And as my work is done, I will like to take my leave now” she said and I nodded clasping both of my hands together as she collected her things in a bag and together we left the room. It was hard for me to walk wearing the heels but thanks to Elena, she taught me to proper manner to walk elegantly and even taught me what to do when my feet hurts wearing the heels.

Halfway in the middle of the staircase, Elena told me that, she left some of her things in the bathroom. I asked to bring it while I drink some water in the kitchen waiting for her.

I poured a glass of water and gulped it down wiping my mouth when I realised Zachary had already arrived.

“Oh, you are here already?” I asked looking his way. He was already ready. He looked amazing in that black tux. He looked really handsome as I looked up at him from head to toe. Dressed sophisticatedly and impressively. I even loved his cologne. I looked at him and smiled at him. What should I even do rather than that? Should I praise his look?

Why is he not speaking?

Am I not looking good?

I even waited for him to speak something but when he didn’t I chose to break the awkward silence.

“And you are ready! So, do I! Let’s go?” I said as I walked up to him and stood right before him.

But then as I waited for his reply he seemed to be lost in deep thoughts. I called his name two times and when he didn’t reply I snapped my finger before him calling his name loudly and thankfully he jerked out of his thinking state and looked at me.

“Let’s go?” I asked and then smiled batting my eyes signaling towards my attire thinking he might get the idea that I wanted to know how I looked in this dress, after all I wore the one that he brought me and that even wore something like this for the first time in my life but to my absolute disappointment he just nodded and said: ”Yes, Let’s go!" then he turned his back to me and walked out not even glancing my way even once. He didn’t even feel the need to check if I was coming or not. Disappointment marred my face and put the loose strands of my hair behind my ear before I stood straight and followed him.

In the car, I mustered up courage and thought to give it a try once again. I thought maybe he just didn’t get it.

“Zachary, you didn’t tell me how do I look?” I asked more like whispered all of a sudden feeling nervous that I asked the stupid question. But then he just broke my heart saying ’You look just fine!’

The only thing that formed in my mouth to his reply was a mere 'oh' I knew the disappointment was clearly audible from my voice but then it didn't really matter any longer. I looked out of the moving car.

Why am I so stupid?

Are you relieved now after making fun of yourself before him?

I kept my mouth shut the whole way but managed to reply in 'hmm' or 'okay' whenever he told me something about the function. He rarely opened his mouth to speak and so, do I.

When we arrived the venue, I was shocked to see a number of people present over there. The paparazzi were clicking pictures for their respective channel like a maniac. They made sure to click each and every second when a celebrity poses before them. So, ironically if you even blink your eyes they would get the pic and it would look weird if there is a pic with a closed eyes. So, just a simple mistake would cause a hindrance. It was my first ever time to be present in an event like this and that actually made me nervous. As soon as our car entered, our car was surrounded by the photographers clicking photos of us like maniacs. The flashlight made me blind for a moment. Thankfully, bouncers had to jump in to push them away. They weren't even moving even after our driver honked like hundred times. The bouncers managed to get space for the car to enter as nearer we got, I felt my pounding heart beating wildly against my chest out of nervousness.

I felt a warm hand on my hand and I looked at Zachary who stared at me and he tugged my hand. First, I thought maybe he got a hint that I was nervous or something. I seriously thought that he wanted to assure me that everything will be fine or something but then all he did was nodding towards the door signaling me to get out.

I nodded and waited for to be out before I slipped towards the door and he held his hand out for me. I took his hands in mine and got out of the car. The only thing I heard was people calling out to us to pose for them, unusually throwing random questions about the function or about me. Zachary slipped his arm around my waist and with a gentle push, he guided me towards the entrance. We posed for the photographers and I smiled at them even though my eyes watered due to the rate of light flashing before me. Gradually, we walked towards the stairs and walked into the hall.

Everything was so beautiful and sophisticated. People gathered in small groups talking and gossiping to each other. Some were laughing while some were looking at others. Everyone looked so sophisticated and they wore expensive and elegant dresses. Even though I was wearing an equally expensive dress, I couldn't help but feel conscious about myself while being surrounded by them. Zachary still had his arms around my waist while walked from between those people and towards our seat. The show had already begun. We sat on our seats with Zachary taking a seat right next to me and I looked towards the side where the cameraman was broadcasting the show live. We waited and watched the show with people laughing and

clapping whenever the host says funny things to deprive the show from turning into a boring one. After waiting for almost thirty minutes, the award function nominations began.

The host invited the special jury members on the stage to announce the businessman of the year. While we waited for them to speak and even though I knew nothing about it, my heart pounded against my chest due to anxiety. I somehow hoped that the award must go to Zachary. Unknowingly, I had my fingers crossed expecting the award for Zachary, and then the lady on the stage announced the name.

Undoubtedly it was Zachary.

If I had Kiara with me at the moment, then we would have jumped up and down like a frog out of excitement and Kiara would have probably whistled screaming her lungs out in joy. But I was in a different situation and with different people. I managed to control my excited hormones and I acted as cool but happy I could by smiling and clapping for Zachary but then he had to do the unexpected. He always does the unexpected.

He stood up and leaned down and hugged me while like a stupid woman I sat there with wide eyes not understanding what just happen. He just caught me off guard. But then when I heard people cheering and clapping, it processed in my mind.

Acting...

He withdrew and walked towards the stage for the award. I was still processing what just happened but then got back into the real and watched the smile on his face. A genuine yet rare smile which I witness only when he is genuinely happy. Like the time when I fell into that fountain...

He took the award and shook hands with the jury before turning up towards the mike.

“Bună seara” (Good Evening) I waited and smiled when he looked fondly at the award and then back towards the audience.

“I am really ecstatic to win the award and winning it for the third time just doubles the excitement” he joked to which people laughed and some whistled.

“I worked hard for this and when you work hard sleepless nights only running after a certain ambition and when finally you achieve it, the pleasure and happiness you feel is certainly the best thing in this world. But you need support and in my case, my family gave me the support and here I am today” he said and people clapped.

“I would like to thanks my mom specially for supporting me in each and every stage of my life and without her, I would have never really had reached this far, accomplished the goals in my life. So thanks, mom, dad and my family. Also, there is another person in my life for whom I made it my aim to reach this far, she is my wife” he said and all of a sudden looked my way. My

breath hitched and looked at him with wide eyes thinking what is he even saying but then again I realised it.

Acting...

I put a smile on my face when people clapped and people sitting next to me congratulated me.

“My beautiful wife Mrs. Juliette Sullivan, she is here to support me today and share the joy and happiness and I feel really grateful that I have her as my wife,” he said and I wanted to get up and run to escape. What is he saying?

“It’s her first time being in a public gathering as my wife. She is just shy” he looked at my uncomfortable face and that is when the big screen behind him had to screen my face on it making the situation even more awkward than it really was. People laughed at his joke and I tried to maintain my composed behavior when thousands of eyes were on me, thanks to the big screen.

“At the end, I would promise that I would certainly try my best and work even harder for the betterment. Thank you” he said and people clapped and cheered for him when he descended down the staircase and walked back to his seat next to me. He even made me hold his award for the rest of the night until the end until the after party where the chauffeur came and took the award from me to keep it in the car.

I walked around with Zachry and greeted every important people he introduced me to. He introduced them to me and me to them and all I did was smile when someone complicated my looks or when someone complicated our pair. In their eyes, we were just some simple ordinary couple who met, dated, fell in love and married to each other, but only me and Zachary knew the truth.

While Zachary was talking a man I excused myself and walked to the table to sit down. I sat on the chair and asked a waiter to let me have a glass of water. I was tired now. I put my feet under the table and freed them from the terribly pointed heels. As soon as I did that, I felt relaxed and I remember what Elena taught me. She had taught me some foot exercise to instantly provide relaxation to the throbbing feet. I did that while sipping water from my glass and instantly felt a little relieved after doing so.

“Congratulations,” I heard a familiar sound and watched as Cosmina came showing her thousand watt smile and stood before me. Hurriedly, I slipped my heels back on and stood up to greet her. She gave me a side hug and I asked her to sit down.

“Congratulation! Sir won the Businessman of the year for the third time” she chirped and I said a quiet thank you before smiling at her. She looked different today. Unlike the other days when she wore her formal clothes with her hair tied up into a neat ponytail, today she was wearing a navy blue backless gown and she had her hair into loose wavy curls. She looked beautiful. Before I could open my mouth to compliment her looks, she interjected complimenting me.

“You look so beautiful today. I could hardly recognize you. Everyone has got their eyes on you today. They just want to know about you” she said and I looked behind her and surely some people were looking our way. I smiled at her pushed the loose strands of hair behind my ear.

“Well, thanks to you,” I said and watched as she gave me a confused look.

“I mean for appointing the best beautician and the dr-” before I could complete her phone rang stopping me in the middle.

“Oh I’m so sorry” she apologized declining the call.

“It’s okay” I smiled.

“And Nah it’s not about the makeup but it’s you. You look so good in this dress. Undoubtedly Sir made the right choice choosing this dress for you” she looked dreamily at my dress and then at me.

What?

“Zachary chose this dress..” I muttered to myself but it seems as if she heard me she nodded yes and rubbed her palm.

“Yes, he did. He sat hours choosing and searching for the perfect one. Wait! you don’t know?” she asked all of a sudden looking confused.

“Of course I do know!” I said laughing at the end and gulping the rest of the water from the glass. She seemed to buy my lie as she nodded and smiled back.

“Excuse me!” I said and got up from my seat and walked searching for Zachary.

All of a sudden, it was like I found that needle in the haystack. So, that man brought the dress for me and he even sat hours searching it for me. So why did he lie to me? It was not as if I would have been angry or toss the dress if he did choose it for me. In fact, it would have been the reverse case.

I searched for him and finally found him. I smiled when I saw him still talking to the man when I excused myself beforehand. As I walked towards him in excitement, my excitement soon died and my steps halted when I saw a woman wearing a dress which revealed more than one would ever imagine, walking up to him and tangling her arms with his. He didn’t even seem to mind it when she leaned down and kissed his cheek.

“Hey isn’t that Loana?” I heard a woman from beside me. They didn’t seem to notice me standing next to them.

“You mean Loana Ularu?"

“Yes, isn’t she Loana Ularu? Mr. Zachary’s business previous business partner’s daughter.”

“Yes, she is!”

“What is she doing here? And why is she sticking up to Mr. Sullivan? Isn’t he a married man now?”

“I had have heard that she used to love him.”

“What?”

“Yes. She was really desperate for him. She would follow him everywhere he went in the past.”

“Really?”

“I swear!”

“What about him? Did he love her?”

“No, I don’t thin so! He never really announced his love for her in public. My husband told me that he only tolerated her for the sake of his business and the relation he had with her father.”

“Really? Then why are they clinging to each other now?”

“Moreover, why would he ever announce his relationship status in public. See? he even got married in privacy.”

“These Businessmen I tell you! Very cunning.”

“You can never trust them!”

“Businessmen? You mean to say every man?”

“Yes, that’s right!” another lady said and they laughed.

“So-” she began but stopped when they finally realised I was standing right next to them. Another lady hushed her and they walked away glancing my way. Meanwhile, I stood there looking and processing what I saw and heard.

What is this new drama in my story?

I looked at the woman who had her hand on Zachary’s back and I noticed as she moved her hand slowly on his back as if trying to seduce him. And he was letting her do that...

I shook my head nad walked towards the small counter where they served drinks. It had been so long when I had a drink.

But what is this feeling that I feeling? Why did my heart hurt seeing him with another woman? It’s his life after all. He can do nd be with whoever he wishes. Who am I to think anything about it?

“So? What are you thinking? Enjoy yourself” my brain told me and I obliged.

Every time I heard people behind me talking about the lady and Zachary, I would end up drinking a shot from what the bartender served me. Shots by shots, shots by shots it increased

where I reached the point where I even lost the count on how much I had gulped down. My throat had the burning sensation and even my chest burned because of the drink or was the burning sensation for something else?

I reached a point where I saw the bartender swaying in his place. Before I could ask him to stop swaying in his place, because I was seeing two faces of him and I felt little dizzy for his action, I felt a hand on my forearm stopping me from having another shot.

Angry for being interrupted from drinking the shot, I turned my head only to find none but Zachary himself.

“What are you doing?” he whispered.

“Oh, you? Come! Sit!” I patted on the seat next to me.

“Serve us drinks!” I told the bartender who nodded.

“No!” Zachary butted in and leaned close to me and sniffed my breath.

“Gosh! Idiot! You are drunk?” he asked and I rolled my eyes at him when he said, Idiot.

“Spoilsport!” I muttered and raised the shot in my hand to drink it but again abruptly stopped by the man next to me.

“Enough! You had enough! Get up now!” he said as he snatched it away from me but like a bolt of electricity, I used my other hand and snatched it back from him and in no time gulped it down my throat before he could stop me.

“Juliette!” he scolded and pulled my arms making me stand up on my feet.

“Aye!” I poked his head.

“Juliette!”

“Let’s dance!” I swayed on my place and he held me by my waist protecting me from collapsing on the ground. My vision was blurry and the world rotated before my eyes.

“What do you say hu?” I asked poking his cheek but confused when I couldn’t feel his skin on my finger when I poked on his head.

“What the -” I was beyond confused.

“I am here!” he took another hand and kept my hand on his shoulder and turned my head towards his direction by my chin.

“Oh! Two Two Zachary’s?” I giggled.

“I can barely tolerate one. Where did you come from? Han?” I asked poking the invisible one.

“God!” I felt his breath on my face.

“Whatever! let’s dance c’mon!” I tugged his arm and leaned on him holding his suit.

“I can’t dance,” he said and he began to walk with me clinging onto him like a monkey.

But he is the monkey. Isn’t he?

“I didn’t ask you! I told you! I said I want to dance and that means we will d-” I hiccupped and then completed it “dance! Do you understand?”

“I don’t know how to dance” he sighed and I stopped in my tracks which made him stop too for he was holding me.

“Don’t know how to dance?” I laughed “So I take it the first ever thing that you told me that you can’t do hu?”

“Yes! Now lets head back home!” he said and pushed me gently and dragged my wobbly steps towards somewhere.

“Listen!” I made him stop again.

“Now what?” he asked sounding kind of irritated.

“I tell you what!”

“What?”

“I don’t know how to dance either,” I said and I was confused whether I saw it or not but from my blurry vision, I saw the two-headed man’s mouth twitched up and he smiled with amusement clear in his eyes.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 42

Zachary Pov

The memorable day of my life. I won the award for the third ever time continuously and I couldn't even ask for anything more. It made me so happy and top to that I had Juliette witnessing the moment when I got the award. I wanted to know how she was feeling about it. Just as I thought, she was happy with my achievements even though she congratulated me after I got the award only for once still, from the smile on her face anybody could decipher that she was happy for me and only by knowing it I was happy too.

The rest of the night went in talking to some of my business investors, meeting new people, people congratulating me and everything was just going great with a person beside me. Juliette...

I knew I made her disappointed when I didn't acknowledge how she looked but then right before me I saw many people even my business investors complimenting and acknowledging her beauty and she even smiled and then it made me think she must not be disappointed because judging by a number of compliments she got for looks what difference would it even make if I do compliment her? Probably nothing.

So, I ignored the topic and concentrated more on the people before and tried to build contacts for my business. But I could see the discomfort in Juliette's face on those heels. Finally, she excused herself and I did have an idea that she was going to sit somewhere and would want to rest her feet. After she was gone, I had some discussions with a man who was my teacher when I was in school. His son is also a knowable businessman and for that, together with their family, he was attending the function. I was very happy to see him after a long time. We talked and discussed about his son's and my business and when I felt somebody's arms circling my back. I turned around to look at that person but soon regretted even looking at the woman who was Ms. Loana Ularu.

"Zackie" she whispered into my ears which made me shiver in disgust.

"How have you been? I heard that you got married. I know it's just a rumor right Zackie?" I looked at her right hand to see a glass of wine. And what in the world was she wearing?

"Ms. Loana Ularu. It's pleasure to meet you. Yes, I did get married. Now, will you please excuse me? I'm an important discussion with this man over here" I pushed her away from me as politely as I could. The woman is really clingy and I just dislike her not only for her inappropriate clothing sense but also for the way she speaks with people.

"What? Oh my goodness! You are really married?" she tangled her arms with mine and clung to me even more. I looked back at my former teacher as he just looked with dislike at the woman and I knew it that currently because of Loana clinging to me, people must be talking about us.

"Yes! I am" I said slowly.

Did she not get the point?

"So where is she? I don't see her though" she looked every direction searching for Juliette.

"Zackie you are such a liar! Don't joke with me" she laughed, a throaty laugh.

"It's Mr. Sullivan for you!" I said as I felt the patient limit of mine decreasing with each and every second she stood beside me. I was only tolerating her because her father was like a mentor to me and my former business partner. I seriously don't understand how her father who is a disciplined and man of principles man doesn't oppose to the way she behaves. She purposely clung to me pressing her chest to my arm and rubbing against me and might I add I didn't like it even for a bit.

Inappropriate way to act with a married man in public.

"Aww c'mon Zackie why the formalities? Everyone knows we had a-" I cut her off.

"Enough!" this time I glared at her and she unwrapped her arms from mine.

"Excuse me! I need to find my wife" I told my teacher to which he nodded smiling at me, understanding what I meant. Without even glancing Loana's way I walked towards the direction where I last saw Juliette. I wonder what has taken her so long to come back to me. Where is she?

I looked for her from the group of ladies and even near the food stalls, she was nowhere to be found. But then I saw Cosmina and asked her if she knew where Juliette was. She told me that she saw her going towards the beverages. I thanked her went in that direction searching for Juliette and then I found her.

What the heck?

There she was sitting on a bar chair before a small counter where she was having alcoholic drinks. I marched up to her side and watched as she laughed, giggled and talked with the bartender. The guy was enjoying serving her. She was going to have another shot when I interrupted her from drinking it and held her forearm stopping her from drinking. She looked up at me angrily because I interrupted but then when she saw my face she smiled. Even though I knew what she was doing still, I felt the need to ask her.

"What are you doing?" I asked through gritted teeth.

Ignoring my question she patted on the seat next to her and asked me to sit down and even asked the bartender to serve me drink.

"No!" I objected and leaned closer to her to smell her breath.

"Gosh! Idiot! You are drunk?" I couldn't help but get angry at her. What is wrong with her?

"Spoilsport!" she muttered rolling her eyes at me and raised the shot in hand to drink it but again abruptly I interfered stopping her from having even a single drop of alcohol.

"Enough! You had enough! Get up now!" I snatched the glass from her hands but then she used her other free hand and a like a bolt of electricity snatched it back and before I could even stop her, she gulped it down.

"Juliette!" I snapped at her and pulled her up holding her arms. She swayed in her place and I had to hold her closer to me. I was scared that if I didn't hold her then she would end up hurting herself. Her slurry voice and strange actions clearly gave me the clue that she was tipsy and her behavior was unusual. She stayed closer to me, even asked me to dance with her and even confessed that like me, she also didn't know how to dance. She irritated me the whole way in the car, she pulled my cheek, pinched me and even tried to jump off from a running car. At some points, I was so irritated by her action and at another, I was amused. I couldn't understand what to do with her.

As the driver pulled before our house, he got out and opened the door for us to get out. I was the first to slip out and then I asked Juliette to come out.

"No, Thank you I think I'll pass the offer" she crossed her arms across her chest and behaved as if she was sober now. Clearly, she wasn't.

I rolled my eyes at her and gave her my hand asking her to come out.

"Are you deaf? I said I am going out for shopping" she whined and leaned against the window and turned towards my direction, keeping her legs on the seat.

"Juliette" I sighed and took in a deep breath before as politely as I could I said: "We are already in the mall. Come out now" I cringed at my own lie.

"Really?" came her slurry voice.

"Let's go now!" I told her and watched as she put her legs down and slipped towards my direction. Finally, I held her arm and pulled her out.

"Good morning!" she greeted to the driver who just smiled at her in response.

"Good night ma'am" he replied and closed the door after I pulled her out and wrapped my arm around her waist and made her walk into the house.

"Listen! I want to buy a neck-klace" she hiccupped and pulled my suit "just like the one you-r mother gave t-to me" as she said that I stopped in my track and looked at her.

“Then you can you have the one which she gave,” I told her and remembered the day when she returned it back to me.

“No! No!” she shook her head no.

“It’s yours. It belongs to you and your fa-family” she said and leaned her head on my shoulder.

I sighed and closed my eyes then dragged her towards the staircase when my phone rang. I thought it would ring and stop but it didn’t. It kept on ringing and finally, I stood near the stair with Juliette leaning on to me. I pulled the phone out and read the caller Id to find it as Mr. Stephen, Juliette’s dad.

“Good evening Mr. Stephen,” I said once I picked it up.

“I will walk up on my own!” Juliette said with her slurry voice and tried to take a step on the stair but I pulled her back and held her tightly.

“Ugh! Let me go! I want to use the bathroom” she said and tried to move.

“Just excuse me for a second Mr. Stephen,” I said on the phone and kept the call on hold before I looked back at Juliette.

“Will you please stand for a second? I’m talking to your dad. Let me end the call” I said and she muttered something and I went back to the call.

Being the stubborn woman she is, she struggled and even dragged me on the stairs. Finally, I let her go and watched her moves as she swayed and holding the rail for the support she made it up to the floor. I sighed once I saw her reaching the top. I assumed she would reach the room and would directly go to sleep. Meanwhile, I had a conversation with Mr. Stephen and he told me that he would be arriving tomorrow in the afternoon with his family. He called to inform me about this. After the call, I hurried up skipping a step and walked towards the bedroom.

As I opened the door and walked in, I looked towards the bed to find it empty.

“This woman!” I muttered and looked the other side of the room to find it empty as well. Hoping that she must be in the bathroom, I walked that direction and knocked before opening it.

“Juliette?” the bathroom was empty as well.

“Juli-” I cut off in the middle when I saw her. There she was in the shower but on the floor. She sat on the floor while the shower ran on her making her soak.

“Juliette!” I said and immediately got rid of my suit jacket and tie and walked towards her. I looked at her as she sat on the floor, with the shower water running on her. She had pulled her legs to her chest and has sleeked her already wet hair to the back as she closed her eyes and sat on the floor calmly letting the water soak her.

“Juliette!” I called her and she opened her eyes and looked up at me.

“My head hurts,” she said and I wondered if she was sober by now.

“Come out now! You will catch a cold!” I said and forwarded my hand for her to take.

“I don’t want to talk to you,” she said and closed her eyes leaning her chin on her hand which was on her knees.

“What?”

I looked at her and then crouched down to her level right on the open glass doorframe and watched as she didn’t look my way.

“Why?” I asked.

“Nothing!” she replied but still didn’t look my way.

“Why did you drink in the party?” I asked and saw as she clutched her soaked dress but still didn’t look my way.

“I don’t know” she replied.

“You don’t know why you drank to point where you couldn’t even stand straight?” I asked with amusement clear in my voice.

“Yes, I don’t know. Now, leave me alone!” she had a sudden uproar in her voice and she glared at me squinting her eyes whenever the water went into it.

Okay! I guess, she isn’t sober yet!

“Leave me alone!” she said and looked the other way.

“You know I can’t do that!” I said truthfully first time ever letting her know what I truly meant.

“Well, then what do you want? You can’t leave me alone, you can’t stick up to me! Then what?” she snapped at me and then before I could open my mouth she started crying.

“Leave me alone!” she cried and hid her face using her hands as she wept and wailed wiping her face and she looked the other way.

She confused me. What did I do? And why is she crying all of a sudden? I got up from my place and walked in even though the soaked me as well, but I didn’t mind it and walked in as I crouched down next to her and made her look at me. She squinted her eyes and closed it shut stubbornly not wanting me to see her eyes.

“Hey, Juliette” I called her and held her arms and pulled her and thankfully she allowed me and we stood up.

“Look at me!” I said slowly more like a whisper.

“No!” she sobbed.

“Look at me,” I said and caressed her cheeks with my knuckles.

She turned her head my way and finally opened her eyes letting me see her beautiful blue orbs which were sad and kind of dark. The shower water drenched us and I moved to stand before her stopping the water coming her way. She looked up to me and held my hands which were on her cheeks and I couldn’t when stop myself when I leaned in and planted my lips over her.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 43

Zachary Pov

Happiness, intensity and sensuousness is what I felt as I kissed her and I wrapped my arms around her waist and with a jerk pulled her closer to me. I heard her gasp as I did that and angled my head to get the perfect access to her lips. As expected, her lips were so soft and due to water running over us, her lips were moist which made me even crazier and I kissed her deeply and passionately pouring the feelings of my heart into the kiss. For minutes, she stood there in shock and as I was going to pull away I felt her hand on the back of my head and I felt her other hand wrapping on my torso as she moved closer and she moved her lips kissing me.

My heart beat raced and I moved my hand feeling her body under my touch. I wanted to take her then and there. We were kissing hard when I moved and sandwiched her body to mine and the wall. I kept both of my hands on the wall and felt as she moved her on my body feeling my abs and muscles. She gasped when I squeezed her waist and then slowly I started kissing her face and neck but then realization hit me.

My eyes jerked open and I moved backward.

Oh shit!

What did I do?

She was panting hard and she stood leaning against the wall with her eyes closed. I pulled my hair in frustration. What did I do?

Why did I do that?

Regret flashed through my body as I hurriedly turned around and turned the shower off. Raking a hand through my wet hair, I walked out of the bathroom. As I came out, I leaned against the wall and put my hand on my mouth. “What did I do?” I felt like crying.

She is not even sober and I kissed her. What will she even think when she gets to know this once she is sober. She would probably hate me even more or worst, she would claim to be sent back her home. What will I do if she asks me to send her back? I can’t lie to myself anymore. I know what has happened to me and I don’t want to run away from it any longer but not like this. Not, like this.

I regretted kissing a drunken woman who has no senses upon what’s going on. She would probably hate me even more. And even if she asks me to go back home, I don’t really think that I can ever stop her. After everything that she has gone through I doesn’t really think it will be a good option to restrain her from any rights and what did I just do?

It's my entire fault. I let my attraction towards her have control over me. I let my emotions control me. This is not good, not for me not even for her.

"This is no-" I stopped in the middle when I felt two hands wrap around my torso.

"Juli-" she cut me off and hush me.

"Juliette, let me go! You are drunk!" I said and tried to pry her hands from around me but she tightened it even more and clutched my soaked shirt denying to let go of me.

"It is not correc-"

"Then what is correct?" she asked me and turned me around.

"You are drunk! You would hate me tomorrow for doing this to you. Understand!" I said as I held her beautiful face and caressed her cheeks using my thumb.

"I can never hate you," she said as she held my hand and leaned into my touch.

"No, this is not good" I jerked my hands away from her touch and turned around walking towards the door. If I stood any longer, then I would no longer control myself. The woman was even trying to seduce me. It is how alcohol turns an innocent and naïve woman to a fierce seductress and confident one?

"Zachary!" she called but I didn't stop. I sped up my pace and walked towards the door just wanting to get away. The temperature in the room was suddenly high all I wanted was to move away, far away from the woman whom I respected the most. No longer did I have any intention to hurt her mentally or physically though what I did earlier was just to save her and keep her oblivious to what was going around her but this was just too much. I can't hurt her, if I do, then I knew I would only end up hurting myself. If she hurt, I feel hurt too. There was a sudden pain in my chest and I knew that my heart hurts thinking that she would hate me when she comes to know what I did today.

Get away, Zachary! Get away.

"Zachary!" I heard her and even felt the hurt in her voice as she called my name.

Just walk! If you stop then she will be more than hurt one could ever imagine. She is a bird, and don't cage her, let her fly for it is for her betterment. You are darkness and you will only end up dragging the fragile angle to your dark world. Even though she will be there with you in your world but you can never have her. She is a bird so, let her fly away. Away from the darkness, away from the monster within you.

"Zac!" that made me stand on my spot instantly with my hand on the door knob. Shock and a strange feeling coursed through my body as I stood there silently and visibly shocked. This was the first time she called me from a name, which only my mom uses to call me when I ignore her or go against her. The feeling of closeness and something new surrounded me.

“I said stop!” came her voice and then I heard footsteps through her clicking of heels as she walked closer to me.

“I said stop. Please!” she begged and then again felt her hands on my back as she leaned against me and I closed my eyes feeling her touch on my body.

“Juliette!” I sighed and turned around to make her understand that this is not possible between us but then stopped when I saw her eyes. Saddened, hurt and despair as she let her tears fell down her cheeks.

“You rejected me,” she cried and sobbed shredding her tears as she looked up at me.

“No, No!” I inched forward and held her head and kissed her forehead.

“I am not in the position to reject you, Juliette! You are higher than me” I said and hugged her and felt as she reciprocated the act as she snuggled her face into my chest.

“I am nothing in your eyes!” she wailed and I withdrew from the hug.

“Who told you that? You are the most beautiful woman I have had ever met in my life and I respect you because I lov-“ I stopped mid sentence realizing what I was just about to say.

Before I could correct myself or say anything I felt her thrashing my body to the door and she pulled m collar and captured my lips kissing me passionately and possessively. I even thought of pushing her away but then I was too shocked to even move my hands. Then like a hurricane, as fast she came she let go of me and looked up at me while we both panted and gasped for air. I looked the passion and desire burning up in her eyes. I felt the alcohol taste and I knew that she was yet sober but then I took a decision. A decision which would either mend my life or ruin me completely.

I pulled her closer and as she didn’t push me away I kissed her showing her that how much she meant to me. Who even made her think that I don’t care for her? I will show her that if any person that means to me is her. Only her. She wants proof? I will give it to her. We didn’t even realize when we fell on the bed and I hovered over her body and kissed her as she held my head and tried to pull me down. As I trailed soft kisses down her neck and ended up on her cleavage, I kissed on it and felt her body arching up to my touch. I kissed every inch and nook of her skin and when I found that spot I heard her soft moans in my ear.

“Say my name!” I whispered into her ears and bite her lobes and felt her humming.

“Zachary” she moaned name and I moved my hand from her waist and stopped it right on her left breast squeezing it making her gasp and moan at the same time.

“Oh Zac!” she moaned and the way my name rolled from her tongue made me even wilder than I already was. She started unbuttoning my shirt and I helped her by ripping it and throwing it away. Still, in my pants, I parted and raised her legs using her thigh and let my dick touch her clothed parts. She jerked up and moaned when I rubbed my rub against her but then I leaned in

and kissed her on her chest. Just as she was about to touch me, I got hold of her hands and locked it with mine and slowly I slowed my pace of kissing her. I had no intention of playing with the emotions of a woman who had no clue or sense to even had the idea of what is going on.

Now, I don't even care but I want her to remember this when she wakes tomorrow morning. I want to let her know that after today the tomorrow will not remain the same. The desire that I saw in her eyes made it clear that she wants me like I want her but I won't proceed until she tells it on my face that like me she has also fallen for me. I want her to know that from today onwards she belongs to me and I would no longer tolerate if she takes the name of her ex in front of me. From today onwards I will not stop myself from confronting her or the man who even tries to get closer to her.

From today onwards she is mine. Rightfully mine. She will be my everything until I breath and I will do anything for her before she would even ask me about it.

"You are my family now" I smiled as I caressed her cheeks and watched as she breathed softly sleeping silently next to me in my arms.

"Because I have fallen for you. Hard!" I whispered into her ear and she snuggled up close to me as I wrapped my arms around her body and held her tight before falling to sleep right next to her.

"Deeply and madly" I smiled into sleep.

The next day, as I worked in my study room I heard the door knobs turning before I heard footsteps. I smiled inwardly but didn't let it reflect on my face. I knew it was Juliette but I didn't even look up.

"Zachary," she said and I acted as if I didn't know why she was here. I looked up at her through my reading glasses and showed her the seat before me to take a sit.

She had her hair into a side braid and she was wearing a black top and jeans with a gray colored cardigan over her top. I marked the hickeys on her chest and neck and as soon as she saw my eyes on the hickeys she pulled her cardigan hiding it away from me and cleared her throat wanting to gain my attention.

She had no idea that she already has my every attention.

"My head hurts!" she said as she held her head and leaned on my table.

"I'm not a doctor. Ask Martha to provide you meds" I said and looked down and acted as if I was focusing on my work more than her.

"Always a jerk!" I heard her mutter which brought a smile to my face.

“Umm I am here to ask you something else!” she said and I looked up at her. As if she felt my eyes penetrating her soul she looked the other way avoiding eye contact.

“And what is that?” I asked as I leaned against my chair and crossed my arms across my chest.

“Umm. Wha- What-t” she stammered to which I raised one eyebrow and nodded urging her to complete what she started.

“What happened y-yesterday?” she asked stuttering in the middle and looked at me.

I narrowed my eyes at her and pulled the glass off my eyes.

“You don’t remember?” I challenged her with my gaze.

She shifted on her seat and scratched her forehead and pursed her lips. She looked nervous and the nervousness proved that she remembered some parts of it at least why she got all those marks on her body.

“No, I don’t!” she said and I nodded but smirked at her but then turned my face into a neutral one when she looked at me.

“Liar!” I thought.

“Well, then how will I know what happened with you? The only parts I know is that you drinking in that mini bar to the point where you couldn’t even stand before you could make a fool out of yourself I saved you by bringing you home and then you slept tired by your actions” I said and acted as calm and cool I could. I skipped some parts because I knew she remembers them. Though not everything guessing from her actions I hoped she remembered some parts of it.

“Th-Tha’s it?” she asked and narrowed her eyes challenging me to tell the whole thing.

As if?

“Yeah! That’s it!” I gave her a nod and smiled.

“Oh! Fine!” she was now glaring at me and I had to pinch my thigh from stopping myself from laughing.

She stood up and smiled sarcastically at me to which I returned with a genuine one of mine. As she walked towards the door I checked her swaying ass and bit down on my knuckles.

I have decided that until she comes forward and tells me how she feels about me I won’t show her any affection from my side, Just because I have fallen for her it doesn’t mean that I will kneel down before her. For me, a relationship is about equality. She must love me as much as I do and I will make sure that she understand that. Until she tells me what I am to her, she will keep on witnessing the ruthless and jerk of a Zachary. Once, she tells me how she feels I

promise to myself she will even forget how she ever felt in love with that rat of a Nicholas. She will see the hidden side of me, which will only love and cherish her until death.

I smiled to myself when stopped right before the door and looked back at me muttering something under breath. She looked clearly pissed.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 44

Juliette Pov

Pulling the duvet up to my chin, I snuggled more into the soft pillow but then slowly my eyes fluttered opened and they roamed around to find myself in the familiar room. I stifled a yawn and closed my eyes shut wanting to sleep a little longer but then they automatically fluttered open when I remembered about the last night. Throwing the duvet off me, I got up and sat leaning against the headboard and touched my temple which was literally throbbing.

“What happened last night?” I groaned as I tried to get and in the process felt a headache. Leaning against the headboard, I held my temples rubbing it to ease the throbbing pain. My eyes fell on the clothes I was wearing to find myself in the same dress from last night.

“How did I even reach here?” I thought as I got up from the and kept my feet on the cold floor. As I walked I stumbled and fell on the bed.

“Jeez!” clicking my tongue I looked at the thing for which I stumbled to find out, it was my heels. I kicked those shoes and they fell near to the wall. Again, getting up from the bed I made my way towards the bathroom.

In the bathroom, I took my dress off and took a shower all the while feeling my head throbbing. As I was towel drying my hair, I walked up to the mirror in the bathroom and stood before it. As I took my brush and paste ready to clean my teeth when my eyes on the reflection of me in the mirror.

“What the hell?” a scream escaped my mouth and the brush in my hand fell on the counter as I stared at my naked body filled with hickeys. My chest and neck region was filled with love bites and I touched them in shock, images of last night came flooding into my mind.

“Oh no!” I yelled pulling my hair and looked here and there before picking up the bathrobe and putting it on.

I paced around and whined seeing those marks on my skin. As I leaned against the counter and thought what happened my face began to heat up and I saw my cheeks turning into deeper shades of red when I remembered some parts of the night. The only thing that I remembered was pulling Zachary to me, hugging him from his back, pulling him into a kiss.

“Oh, What have you done? You- You idiot!” I exclaimed pointing a finger at my own reflection in the mirror.

I can’t believe that I literally mauled him into doing something which he would never ever imagine. I remember his words ‘No! Let me go!’, ‘No, this is not good’.

“Argh! What have I done?” I exclaimed pulling my hair.

“How will I show him my face?” I thought as I paced around faster and stopped when the pelvic region of my body hit the counter.

“Ow! Ow!” I hissed in pain and rubbed the spot but then began to hit my head on the counter.

“I am finished!” I looked up at myself in the mirror and then burst into tears bawling and crying my eyes out.

Wandering around the hall, I thought what to do. I was standing right before his study room’s door and I knew he was in there. Why has he not shown up to me since morning? Oh no! Is he ashamed, insulted, embarrassed because of me?

“Argh!”

“Okay! You know what? You can do this Juliette. Go up to him and observe him. If he shouts or insults you then just listen and apologize this would decrease the tension between us and if he did- oh! Just go inside and listen to him! Go! C’mon you can do it!” I mustered up courage and reached to turn the door knob but then I gave up and clicking my tongue and moved back and jumped in aggravation.

“No! No! I can’t do that!” I exclaimed and stomped my feet on the floor. As I carried on complaining and pacing around muttering to myself my eyes fell on the two maids who stood in the corner, one was holding a bucket filled with water and a mop in another hand, while the other maid stood there looking at me as if I were some insane woman. I stood straight and cleared my throat. I smiled up at them and as they saw me looking their way, hurrying they moved away from my sight

“Jeez!” I exclaimed.

“Okay!” I nodded and took in a deep breath before knocking and turning the knob. I peeked up inside and saw him wearing his reading glasses as he sat on his usual chair doing his work. So, not wanting to disturb him, I walked in slowly and stood before him before his desk. All the while, I tried to act cool but in inside I was screaming. My heart pounded and I felt my palms sweating as I rubbed them against my cardigan.

“Zachary,” I tried to gain his attention and he looked up at me through his glasses and signaled me to take a seat on the chair which I did and thought what to say next.

As I sat down, my cardigan flared up towards the side which caused showcasing of my hickeys. I saw him looking at those marks and embarrassed, I pulled the cardigan back to myself not wanting to give him an idea that I was showcasing or doing it on purpose or anything. Then I cleared my throat to gain his attention and he looked back at me which made me even more nervous. Instead of saying the things that I planned and made a list in my mind, like a fool I said: “My head hurts!” and to keep my words I held my head as if it was really pained meEven though, after taking the medicines it was not throbbing like beforehand still like a Chameleon I changed my colour and was bound to act because of my stupid mouth. But as the sarcastic

person he is, he had to give me a sarcastic reply. I just told him that my head hurts but he had to say that he was a not a doctor and all.

Always a jerk!

But then also I tried to keep my anger in the other side as I talked to him.

“Umm I am here to ask you something else!” I said as he looked up at me. He looked at me like a way as if he was trying to read me or something but that kind of made felt intimidated for which I looked the other way avoiding his eye contact.

“And what is it?” he asked and I watched he took the paperweight in his hand and held it in his palm

Now how am I supposed to ask him how does he feel after what I did to him the previous night?

“Umm. Wha- What-t” I cursed myself for stammering at a moment like this and the fact that he raised an eyebrow and nodded as if urging me to complete my sentence made it even more uncomfortable.

“What happened y-yesterday?” I said in one go but did stutter in the middle.

What!

What do you mean by ’what happened yesterday? As if you don’t know! Ask ‘What is he feeling?’

Damn nervousness!

He isn’t going to kill you!

He narrowed his eyes at me and pulled his glasses off before looking straight in my eyes, he asked: “You don’t remember?”

Yeah! Now what?

You don’t remember? my inner-self mocked me and I shifted in my seat, scratching my forehead I replied “No! I don’t!”

To say I was beyond angry would have been an understatement. The man said that he doesn’t know anything and he saved me the night because I was drunk and he brought me home and I slept.

“T-That’s it?” I questioned shocked by his behavior. How does he not remember what happened in between that ‘brought home’ and ‘slept’ part? Well, honestly I remember clearly that the man I was kissing and mauling were no other man by him. Yes, I do remember hugging and cuddling against a man and clearly, I remember his face. It was indeed Zachary. How dare he? Acting as if he doesn’t remember anything. Or was it nothing for him? Was it meant

nothing to him? Well, it doesn't mean anything to me as well. But the thing is when I can come all the way up here and as him about it then how dare he tell me he doesn't remember? I thought I was the one who was drunk last night. What happened to his brain? And what about all these hickeys and love bites? Don't tell me I kissed myself. My lips won't even reach my neck. What the fuck?

He even confirmed that that was all. Fine! then if he doesn't care then why should I care about it?

"Oh Fine!" I said and got up from the seat. I smiled at him but all the while glared at him and turned around to leave.

"Who does he thinks of himself?"

"He ain't a model or prince charming"

I looked back at him when I reached the door "Every man is same and stupid!"

I left his room and dashed towards the kitchen where I asked the cook to make me something to eat. I would easily eat Zachary's head in the moment because I was so hungry. As I waited sitting on the kitchen counter waiting patiently for Hilda who was our cook to finish up, Zachary walked in and looked at me. I crossed my arms across my chest and avoided him.

I have decided. I will never talk to him ever again. He can go to hell if he wants to as if I care. He went to the fridge and took a bottle of water out and gulped it down and then looked at me.

Stop looking at me!

"What are you cooking Hilda?" he asked but all the while looked my way.

Why are you looking at me? Is my name Hilda or am I the one who is cooking?

"Sir, I'm making Ciorba de fasole cu ciolan" (Bean soup with hocks) Hilda looked at me and smiled to which I returned with my own.

"Make sure you don't serve it hot. Somebody's brain is already hot today, it would blast" Zachary said and smirked looking my way. There was a cucumber next to me where I was sitting. I took it and threw it at him which he caught easily and took a bite from it and walked out with a smug look out of the kitchen.

"Madam, should I serve it hot or should I cool it?" Hilda asked and I looked at her blinking my eyes thinking should I glare at her or should I throw a cucumber at her too?

As it was the noon time, I fell on the bed like a lioness who likes to rest after having a heavy meal. I could even look at my stomach from my lying position.

“I ate too much!” I laughed and crossed my leg and took my phone as I went through it searching for an online game. I was halfway through the game ‘The Subway Run’ when I heard the bell ringing.

“Who came here?” I thought as I threw the phone on the bed and walked out of the bedroom, down the stair and watched as a maid opened the door.

“Juliette!” I gasped when I heard the voice and when the maid stood out of my sight, I found myself running to my family who stood there looking towards my direction with happiness in their eyes.

“Mom!” I jumped and pulled her into a hug and she returned it pulling me up to her.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 45

Juliette Pov

“Mom!” happy tears shredded down my cheeks she engulfed me into a tight hug and sobbed while I still couldn’t believe that I was in her arms.

“Oh my darling!” she cooed and kissed my cheeks.

“Julie!“I heard Jace’s voice and pulling away from mom I looked behind her to find Jace standing looking at me with teary eyes.

“You kid!” I cried and pulled him into a hug and he wrapped his arms around my body and laughed when I punched him softly on his side.

“What is all this facial hair?” I asked as I pulled away from him and touched his cheeks which had facial hair.

“And you look quite tall. Did you grow or something?” I asked and he nodded and wiped his eyes.

“How are you?” he asked nad I nodded telling him that I was fine.

“Dad!” I hugged him and he smiled down at me. Mom took out a handkerchief and blew her nose loudly and I looked at her.

“Mom!” both me and Jace said in unison.

“What? I am just too happy. I can’t help with my runny nose!” she exclaimed and blew her nose again using the handkerchief. Her actions brought a smile to my face but then I heard someone calling name almost like a whisper. Jace cleared his throat and took a step aside to reveal the person from behind him.

“Kiara!” I said once I took her in. She looked miserable. Dark circles under her eyes, she even looked thin, her hair was messy and oddly enough she was wearing just a simple sky blue jeans and a white t-shirt with black ballet shoes.

“Juliette,” she said and bit her lips probably trying to stop herself from crying but she failed miserably as the tears streamed down from her cheeks and minutes later she began to sob and weep.

“Oh, Kiara!” I exclaimed sadly and walked up to her and engulfed her in a hug.

“I-I am so sorry!” she cried and encircled her arms around mine burying her head on my shoulder.

“It’s okay! Don’t cry now!” I shushed her and tried to pull away.

“No! I’m really really sorry. What I did was due to of my cowardliness. You trusted me and I failed you. I-I am so sorry!” she sobbed and I patted her back and pulled away. I wiped her tears and smiled at her.

“It’s okay! Forget about it. I forgive you” I said and that made a small smile lit up on her face.

“Really?” she asked to which I nodded.

“She literally begged us to come with us to meet you!” Jace commented from behind me and Kiara glared at him.

“Shut up kid!” she said through gritted teeth which made all of us laugh.

“C’mon let’s go in!” I said everyone nodded. I took hold of Kiara’s luggage and as soon as I turned around we all stopped in our tracks when we saw Zachary coming our way and stood before us. His face unlike some hours ago, void of any emotions, shoulder straight, and chin held up high. He intimidated everyone in terms of power and strength and Jace looked kind of nervous when Zachary’s eyes fell on him. Zachary narrowed his eyes at Kiara which caused her to take a step back and she hid behind me avoiding his gaze.

“Welcome, Mr. and Mrs. Swanson,” Zachary said and forwarded his hand for dad to take. Dad took his hand and then mom too shook her hand with him.

“You must be Jace Swanson,” Zachary asked Jace and forwarded his hand for him to take. Jace looked uncomfortable for a minute but then took his hand for a handshake. Very unusually, Zachary smiled at him and I watched Jace visibly relaxing before giving him a smile of his own.

Then he looked at me and I raised an eyebrow at him.

“And she must be your best friend Kiara Richmond,” he said but I felt as if he was taunting or more like mocking me by saying the word ‘best friend’. It was pretty much clear that Zachary heard the whole conversation back then when I had asked him to let me call my family. Kiara behaved as if she didn’t know me and she hung up on me.

Is it the fact that he doesn’t trust her? What is this look?

Clearly, Zachary didn’t like Kiara but why? I forgave her for that and he must do it too.

“Let’s go in,” he smiled at my parents and guided them in. Jace was the last one to go but he looked my way and then at Kiara who was shaking in fear from behind me.

“Kiara. It’s okay! Don’t mind him. He always like that!” I said and she nodded frantically. I sighed and picking up her small luggage took her in. Once, inside we all sat in the living room and I asked the maids to serve everyone water and drinks. Zachary sat next to Jace and I watched as they bonded well. Jace was smiling, even more, talking to him. Zachary looked interested hearing everything about his university and that made me little relieved. On the other hand, Kiara sat next to my dad and mom sat next to me.

“How have you been sweetie?” she asked and I looked at her and smiled.

“I am doing perfectly fine mom” I answered and looked back at Zachary who was now looking at me. He glanced at dad when he asked a question and they talked to each other while Kiara sat there nervously in a stiff posture clearly frightened of Zachary.

“And how is he to you?” mom asked and as I about to answer her I heard my dad speaking up.

“Did you by any chance track Vito?” he asked and Zachary shook his head no.

“I freed Nicholas and currently he is under my men’s watchful eyes. As soon as he tries to contact his dad we will get them both,” Zachary answered and I saw Jace balling up his fists, his jaw was clenched and he was visibly shaking out of anger.

“I hate that man!” Jace said through gritted teeth and I watched as Zachary looked back at him and said: “we all do!”

“He tried to hurt my sister,” Jace said and looked at my direction with teary eyes. I mouthed him that ‘I was okay, don’t worry’.

“Ugh! That man!” Dad exclaimed.

“Please, Mr. Sullivan try to get him as quickly as you can. You have already done so much for me and my family. I can’t burden you with Juliette’s responsibility. As soon as Vito is captured, I want to take Juliette back with me to her home,” he said and smiled at me before looking at Zachary.

My smile faded away from my face and I looked towards Zachary thinking how will he respond.

“Yes, I understand that! We are trying to get him as soon as possible and answering your first question, Juliette isn’t a burden for me” he said and that brought up a smile to my face but his expression when my dad told him that he wanted to take me back home kind of hurt me. He was neutral. Does this mean it will not affect him if I go back home?

“Oh, I’m glad to hear that!” my father exclaimed happily.

“Anyways, you all must be tired. I will let Hilda show you your room. Rest well and my parents will also be joining us tomorrow. I hope everyone to be comfortable and if you need anything let me know” Zachary said and asked Hilda to show the rooms.

“Rest well Mom,” I said as I hugged her and she nodded.

I nodded at Kiara who looked reluctant to go but then she went away when Jace pulled her with him.

Now only me and Zachary were left in the room.

“I am going out for a business meeting. I won’t come back in the night. I hope that doesn’t affect the family reunion” he said and I nodded ‘no’

“Great! I will come back tomorrow with my family in the morning. If you need anything, ask Hilda, she will not be going home today. She will be in the staff rest room and other than that I have people surrounding the house guarding the house. If any problem arises just call me” he said and I nodded.

“Okay,” he whispered and took a few steps back and then walked away.

I sat down back on the sofa saddened and troubled with my mind. A lot of things were going on inside my mind and I couldn’t quite decipher what to do. What type of situation is this where I am wishing for something very unusual. Where I am wishing for Vito to never be caught by him.

A sigh escaped my mouth and I got up from my seat and walked towards my bedroom. As I sat on my bed the somebody knocked on my door and I stood up.

“Is it Zachary? I thought he has already left. Why is he knocking?” I whispered to myself as I walked to the door and opened it only to reveal Kiara.

“Kiara!” I smiled and took a step aside letting her walk in.

“Am I disturbing you?” she asked as she walked to the chair and sat on it.

“Nope! Not all!” I said and took the other seat, sitting before her.

“I just came here to apologize once again. Juliette trust me, I was a coward. I saw guns and blood and when you called some of Mr. Sullivan’s man were around me keeping their eyes on my move. I was scared and that was the reason why I..You know behaved as if I didn’t know you. I am really sorry” she said and I could see the regret in her eyes.

“You can’t believe, what I have been through. I was traumatic losing you like that. But then I believe my pain must be nothing before yours. Juliette,” she stood up ad knelt before me keeping her hands on my thigh.

“Tell me, how are you? I got to know everything about that Emmett being Nicholas recently and I have been told that you know it too” she asked and I nodded pursing my lips I held her hands in mine.

“I am fine now. Honestly, I was broken both from outside and inside knowing that the person whom I loved the most cheated me, betrayed me. I was loving an unreal person and that is what hurts me the most” I sighed and she squeezed my hands.

“I am sorry for failing as a friend. I should have been there for you but look at me. I am such a coward” she put her head on my thigh sobbing.

“Kiara! Please stop blaming yourself. I understand and honestly, I don’t blame you. It’s okay. I’m all over it now and I have got nothing to do with him anymore,” as I said that she looked up at me.

“And what about Mr. Sullivan?” she asked and I raised my eyebrows in confusion.

“How does he treat you? Did he hurt you or did he tor-” I cut her off.

“Kiara!” I said and she halted in mid-sentence. “Look around! Do you see any bruise or sadness in my face? I am free in this big house and nobody has ever tortured or hurt me. Zachary has always saved me from every problem and the only one who has ever tried to hurt me is Nicholas” I said his name with distaste.

“Kiara, do you know this? He wants to kill me and he is after my m-” this time she cut me off “Your money.”

“You know?” I asked shocked and she nodded “Your father told me and Jace everything.”

“Truthfully I believed that in all this, Mr. Sullivan is the villain until I got to know about that jerk, Nicholas” she said and I nodded smiling a little.

“And yeah! It is also your fault!” she said raising her tone all of a sudden scolding me.

“What?”

“Yes, when we all told you that we don’t like him, you chose to ignore us. See what happened” she said and got up but then stopped when her eyes fell on the region just below my neck.

“I see bruises” she sand and sat on the chair.

“What?” I hid the damn hickey marks with my cardigan and shifted on my seat.

“When you asked me if I can see any bruises on your skin, I do! I can clearly see it” she had a smug look on her face which I wanted to slap away.

“No, it isn’t what you think” I tried to explain but she shook her head mocking me.

“Kiara!”

“Kiara, stop!”

“I will kill you!” like kids we were running inside the room. I chased her while she laughed and I missed her when she ran circling the chair. When we were near the bed, I grabbed a bolster and threw it on her. The bolster hit her on her face and she tumbled on the bed and I joined her and tickled her until the point where tears streamed down her face.

“Okay! Okay, I’m sorry. I won’t tease” she said and then I let her go and lay down next to her.

“Do you like him?” she asked all of a sudden looking my way.

“What? No! No, I mean I don’t know” I sighed and then looked up all of a saddened and confused by my own feelings.

“What do you mean by you don’t know? What is this love bites then? Was it not in mutua-” she asked and I looked at her.

“I was drunk last night!” I said and watched as her eyes grew big to the size of a saucer.

“What? Does this mean he forced himself on y-”

“Kiara!” I snapped.

“Then?” she asked.

“As much I remembered...” I licked my lips feeling little ashamed and awkward to tell her that.

“I-I kind of forced myself on him” I completed and she jumped off the bed looking at me astonished.

“What? Oh my goodness!” and then she was laughing.

“Kiara!” I threw the pillow on her.

“Yes, I agree. You can actually do that when you are drunk” she said and I got up in a crouching position on the bed. “Really?” I asked and she nodded.

“You just lose it when you’re drunk. Your emotions reflect from within you and guessing from what you just told me, I think” she halted.

“You think what?” I asked urging her to speak up.

“I think that you, my friend, are in love” she sang and I rolled my eyes at her even though I felt my cheeks burning. I fell on the bed from my side and hid my face using the pillow.

“No, are you mad? It’s nothing like that!” I argued.

“Oh stop denying it,” she said in a singsong tone.

“Stop it, Kiara!” I groaned.

“Fine! Tell me does he know this? Did you tell him that you at least like him?” she asked all of a sudden curious.

“No, he doesn’t know. And what will he even know? I don’t love him!” I argued.

“Okay! You don’t even like him?” she asked.

“No!”

“Okay!” she said and lied down next to me.

“You know he is handsome and he is rich. If you have no interest in him, can I take him?” before she could finish I jolted up from the bed and snapped “Kiara!”

“What?”

“Don’t even think of that! Do you understand?” I snapped and felt anger boiling up my blood.

“Why? What is your problem? He may like me asw-”

“He.is.mine” I said enunciating each word. As soon as I said that the room fell into a silence and she just stood there staring at me and then all of a sudden burst out laughing.

“Gotcha!” she said in between laughs.

“What?” I asked and sighed pinching the bridge of my nose.

“Do you remember when I told you I don’t like Emmett and even told you that I just put a finger on what I felt odd in him?” she asked and I looked at her.

“It’s his behavior and the way he treated you. It was as if he always wanted to keep you wrapped around his finger. Juliette, listen to me” she said and all of a sudden became serious as she walked up to me.

“Listen to me. I think Zachary Udolf Sullivan is the right choice for you. Do you know why I am saying this to you?” she asked and I waited for her to complete.

“Because he came to me and lectured me for being a coward friend. He told me that if you were in my place then you would have never acted the way I did, in fact, you would have done anything in your capability to reach me. He asked me to come to you and not to leave you alone. Juliette, he completely thinks about you. And I think he likes you too and yes, he is the right choice for you. Don’t deny it” she said.

“What? he told you all this?” I asked and she nodded.

“He told me that he is going to a meeting and I should mend the relationship between us,” she said and smiled at the end.

“Juliette, listen to me. Accept him and the feelings that feel for him before anyone enters and tried to create misunderstanding between you two. Accept it now else, unfortunately, I have to tell you this,” she kept her hand on my cheeks “you will have to go through that pain and suffering again which you went through because of Nicholas. Trust me, challenge your feelings and accept it before its too late. And even let him know this” she said and again for the third time of the day, her words left me in deep thoughts.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 46

Juliette Pov

“The house is damn big!” Jace said as Hilda served us our food. It was already the time for dinner and hence, we all sat together in the dining hall on the dining table for dinner. Only one person was missing that was undoubtedly Zachary.

“I don’t get it, how are even able to manage the whole house all by yourself?” he asked to which everyone looked at me.

“What? I don’t really do anything. Everything is managed by Hilda and the other maids” I told them and he nodded.

“That’s good! Don’t get used to all this, after all, you will soon be back to your own house and then I don’t want you to miss all this,” dad said which made Kiara and mom look at my direction. Kiara with a look as if she wants me to tell dad that ‘I don’t want to leave Zachary even after all this ends’. I nodded my head no at her and she shook her head sighing at me.

“Honey please!” I heard mom.

“What? It is the truth! She shouldn’t get used to all this. After all, she can build her own house like this now with the money that dad had left for her. She shouldn’t rely on Mr. Sullivan for money,” I cut him off “Dad!”

“I am not with Zachary because of his” I air quoted “money.”

“I know!” dad said with a guilty look “I mean, just don’t get used to him or his wealth.”

“Dad!” I licked my lips as I looked back at Kiara and then at Jace ” Regarding the money that grandpa has left for me,”

“Yeah? What about it?” he asked.

“I don’t want it!” I said and the spoon dropped from his hand hitting the costly clay plate making a noisy clinging sound.

“What do you mean by you don’t want it!” he snapped, anger contouring his feature.

“Dad! I said I don’t want it means I don’t want it!” I snapped back. When it came to anger me and dad were always equal and it was only because of him, I snapped and gave him angry remarks whenever I lose my calm.

“We are talking about money over here and not just some pound or dollar but billions. You want to throw it or give it to charity? Are you mad?” he asked which made me hold the bridge of my nose in aggravation.

“Dad! Don’t overreact! When did I even tell you that I will hand it over to the charity? Will you let me complete?” I asked and he was going to speak but as mom held his arm stopping him from speaking he sighed and nodded urging me to continue.

“I want to transfer it to Jace’s name,” I said and everyone said “What?” in unison stunned by my decision.

“Are you mad? I don’t want it! If you do transfer it my name then they will be after me to kill me. In your case, you have a powerful man, your husband Zac who will save your sorry ass. Who will save me from those goons?” Jace said with an animatic look.

“Zac?” I asked stunned.

“Yes, he said I can call him that” Jace smiled and I looked at Kiara shocked.

“I will slap you hard on your face Jace. Is this the way you talk with your sister?” mom warned Jace who just shifted in his seat and lowering his head he muttered a quiet sorry.

“What is this decision all of a sudden?” Dad asked and I thought for a moment.

“Listen carefully!” I said and told them the plan that I had been thinking from the day dad revealed about Nicholas being after my money.

“Oh, you look little thin,” mom told me as she caressed my hair as I put my head on her lap in my room.

“You two sleep on the same bed?” dad asked looking like as if he was going to pass out.

“Honey!” mom snapped at him.

“No, I mean do you both sleep on the same bed?” he asked exaggerating again.

“Mom please tell him to go away and leave me alone,” I complained and mom nodded.

“Honey, go back to the room and change and sleep,” she told him and dad opened his mouth to speak to which mouth cut him off as she said warningly “I said go to the room and SLEEP,” she glared at him and I looked at dad who visibly gulped and left the room politely but not before looking my way as if telling me that he would ask me the question later when mom is not around.

“You scared him,” I giggled to which mom laughed.

“He is just too much sometimes” mom complained and I couldn’t deny that.

My dad had that habit of exaggerating everything. He will even argue and fight and he would say that whatever he is saying is right, until mom interferes.

“And no I’m not thin, I feel like as if I had put on weight. My jeans are now tight to me” I said and she shook her head “Nonsense! Look at your face, you look slim” she said to which I shrugged.

“DO you like Zachary?” she asked and I looked up at her with wide eyes.

“What? Mom! Oh no,” I groaned and got up from her lap and turned around on the bed to face her.

“Must be Kiara! Did she tell you everything right? I will just have to beat up her ass” I said and moved to get off the bed but mom held my hand and stopped me.

“No, she didn’t!” she said and that stunned me.

“Then?” I asked in a low tone.

“So, with the reaction, I’m getting I assume you do like him. Don’t you?” she asked and I averted my eyes the other way and moves the loose strands of my hair behind my ear.

“No, I don’t,” I told her and she held my chin and turned my face towards her.

“Yes, you do! Else you wouldn’t be looking so hurt and angry every time your dad mentioned about taking you back home after everything is sorted” she said smiling at me.

I got up from the bed and walked towards the table where I took the glass and poured a glass of water for myself.

Damn! Are my expressions that obvious?

Why is everyone noticing my expressions every time?

And why is everyone after me and my love life?

“Because isn’t it obvious? We all want to see you happy,” mom said and I choked on the water that I was drinking and coughed vigorously.

“You read my mind?” I asked to which she rolled her eyes.

“You are predictable and I am your mom!” she answered. I smiled at her and crossed my arms over my chest.

“Did you let him know about your feelings?” mom asked and I looked at her with wide eyes.

“No, No! I mean not yet” I said and sighed.

“Why not?” she asked and I decided not to answer that question.

“Okay, I won’t ask you anything about it but I would like to advise you that whatever Kiar told you, it is true,” she said and I looked back at her.

“I overheard both of your conversation in the afternoon and that is how I got to know,” she said smiling sheepishly.

“Mom!” I groaned.

"What? Okay sorry! But it's good that I got to know about it else unknowingly I would have supported your dad of taking you back home. Unknowingly we would have hurt your feelings and that is good that I got to know about it. And like Kiara told you, it will be good if you tell about it to Zachary as soon as possible. He must know it" she said and I kept my hand on my head.

"I will see," I told her and she sighed as she got up from the bed and came to me and kissed on my cheek.

"Think about it before you sleep," she said and I nodded.

While she walked to the door to leave she turned around and with a determined look told me "don't worry I won't let Stephen interfere in your love life. He would have to face me whenever he even thinks about separating you two," she winked at me and left the room closing the door behind her.

I smiled and shook my head at her and walked back to the bed, where I picked up my phone and slide on the screen to open it.

Should I call him?

"No, then he will say I'm nagging him" I muttered and was about to keep the phone aside when it vibrated. Quickly looking at the screen, I was delighted when I read the caller ID displaying 'My love' I rolled my eyes at the name and slid on the screen to answer.

"What are you doing?" he asked directly jumping to the point.

"Hello to you too!" I said sarcastically and I wasn't even sure if I heard him cracking a laugh.

"Well then, Hello how are you?" he asked and that brought a smile on my face.

"Fine, until now when someone called me," I said and this time I heard his laugh. I put my ear closer to the phone's speaker to hear his masculine husky laugh. His laugh made me smile too until I heard a woman's voice in the background.

At first, I thought it must be Cosmina but then the voice was different. What felt like anger mixed with jealousy rose up my body when I heard the same woman again talking "Zackie listen to me!"

"Give me a second!" Zachary said and he abandoned me for that woman.

"Ms. Ularu, I said I'm talking to my wife. Will you please excuse me?" I heard Zachary and as soon as I heard the name Ularu, my blood began to boil.

"By Zackie, the food is ready. I cooked it myself" the woman chided and I heard Zachary groaning.

Zackie?

“Juli-” before he could say anything I cut him off “Yes, Zackie! Your food is ready. Go and eat your food” I said sarcastically and hung up on him.

“Idiot!” I snapped at nobody in particular and stuffed my face with the pillow screaming loudly in it. Thankfully, the pillow successfully muffled my scream or else I would have been trouble.

“Zackie” I huffed and mocked the lady’s tone as I shifted on the bed to sleep.

As he had told everyone from his family arrived including him as well. My mother met his mother and it looked like they bonded very well. Zachary’s mother kept on talking and praising me ‘how I was her good daughter-in-law’ and my mother looked at me with proud because it was only because of her good guidance and parenting I was praised today and she felt proud of it. On the other hand, I got to meet Zachary’s grandmother. She came with Zachary’s cousin Kristian all the way just to meet me. I was shocked to see her polite and kindness. She talked so little but wisely and she said ‘she was glad that I came into his grandson’s life’ and the only wish she has that to see Kristian find someone like me and settle.

Talking about Kristian, he didn’t come and Zachary’s father Gale told us that he had gone to another town for an urgent meeting. It looks like he was a businessman as well. My father and Gale also bonded with each other well and Jace and Kiara had the same expression as me when I came to know about Zachary’s grandfather being the ex-mafia leader whom the whole world knew because of his crimes.

Although I sorted everything to them, they looked little relevant of being around him and I understood that but then it was Zachary. I was keen on avoiding him every time he asked me anything.

What was he even doing with that Ms. Ularu the previous night when he clearly told me that he was going to a meeting. So, meeting that lady is his so called meeting.

“What is your problem?” he asked when I was slicing the home baked chocolate cake for the whole family in the kitchen.

“What? What did I do?” I asked not even glancing his way.

“Liste-” he stopped when his mother walked into the kitchen and smiled at me. She took the plate where I had served the cake pieces and went away.

“You are ignoring me!' he said through gritted teeth and this time I glared at him.

“So what?” I asked challenging him.

“But why?” he asked and snatched the knife from my hand.

“I can do whatever I want!” I said and pushing him I went past him and out of the kitchen but then turned around and said:“Slice the remaining pieces and serve them in the other plates!” I said and he looked at the knife he was holding and at the cake in the kitchen counter.

As I turned around to leave I heard someone giggling and found both his and my mom standing in the corner giggling.

“She is already controlling my son,” his mom said and my mom shrugged her shoulder. I gave them a small smile and feeling little awkward that they overheard our conversation I left the place.

I avoided him continuously for three days, including in the night I would build up a barrier in between us in the bed using the bolster and not answering a single questioned that he asked. I didn’t even iron his shirts nor acknowledge his presence until the evening when I looked at myself in the mirror. I was dressed in an olive green strapless thigh slit gown and beige colored high heels. Kiara did my makeup with smoky eyes and light pink lipstick and she had curled my hair only in the end. She wore a pink colored skater dress with golden beads on her neckline and hemline. She wore a golden color peep toe shoe and did the same hairstyle as mine.

Our whole family was going out for dinner in a restaurant and that is why we all got ready before the time.

“Let’s go,” I said and she nodded as we walked out of the room to the living room where everyone was waiting.

“Oh wow” Zachary’s mom exclaimed looking at us.

“Thank you,” we said and smiled at each other.

“I will drive yo-” before Zachary could say anything I cut him off and asked his father, Gale “Can we come with you in your car?” I asked referring myself and Kiara and he looked at Zachary and then at me “Um Yeah! Sure” he looked apprehensive while he talked because his so called on was glaring at him now.

“Fine! Let’s go, Mr. and Mrs. Swanson. Jace, you can take the front seat,” he said and Jace nodded smiling at him. Grandpa went with them and me, Kiara, Zachary’s mom and grandma chose to go with Gale.

“Okay, Let’s go,” Gale said and we all went out and sat in his car.

As we were about to drive off, Zachary’s car overtook us going out at a full speed. Jace had a smug face when he plastered his face in the car’s window as he looked our way. That made us laugh. Jace loved speed cars and in the other hand, I prayed for my family who was in that car with Zachary.

“He is pissed,” Kiara commented into my ear and I just shrugged in response.

“You saw his driving?” Gale complained to mom and she snorted.

“Better than yours,” she said and we all laughed when he groaned at her response and muttered about something always taking her son’s side.

In the restaurant, I sat next to Kiara and made sure Jace sit next to me this made Zachary even more pissed off as he went to the other side and sat before me glaring at me. I rolled my eyes at him and averted my eyes off him.

Our big family needed a big table and that is why we chose to take a table on the terrace in open sky enjoying the night with the pianist playing in the background and a beautiful scenery of the nightlife of Romania.

“Oh I am in love with this place,” my mom said and my mother-in-law who was sitting next to her nodded in agreement. They laughed and talked so much it looked as if they were best friends from a long time. My dad even talked to my father-in-law as if they buddies. Everyone looked happy but the only person who wasn’t was Zachary who stabbed his food with his fork and it looked as if he was thinking the vegetable ball as my face when he stabbed it.

“Oh, he is here,” Grandma said out loud and we all looked the direction where she was looking. Kristian was supposed to join and he had called his grandma informing her that he would bring his date to join us.

But then the color drained my face and I heard both my mother-in -law and father-in-law groaning when we spotted the man whom I guessed as Kristian and the woman with whom he entered the place.

Loana Ularu.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 47

Juliette Pov

Everyone's eyes were trained on the couple who entered from and then as they spotted us they walked up to us. Loana was wearing a royal blue dress just like mine. Kiara looked at me and then at her. She had her arms linked up with whom I assumed to be Kristian as they walked towards us.

On the other hand, Kristian looked and reminded me, James Dean, with that bad boy aura. He had his black hair sleeked back and he wore a gray-colored business suit. Unlike Zachary, he had facial hair and he had chiseled jaw and sharp hawk-like eyes. He didn't really seem like a welcoming person instead, you would want to run away whenever he was nearer to you. I gulped when he looked at me and gave me half-smile.

"You must be my sister-in-law," he asked in a soft tone and I couldn't help but notice a scar above his left eyebrow and he had a crooked nose.

I stood up when he came to me with Loana and took my hands in his.

"Yes, I am" I answered softly smiling at me and looked at Loana who gave me a nasty look of disgust raising an eyebrow at me as she looked up and down at me.

"Pleasure to finally meet you," we shook hands and I replied with the same.

"I'm sorry, for not coming earlier to meet you two, because-" he was speaking to me when he looked beside me. I followed the direction where he was looking to find him looking at Kiara, who was uninterestingly eating her food.

I heard him clear his throat and I looked back at him, he rolled his shoulders and said: "I was stuck in an important business stuff and I was in the other part of the world. I could only make it today because I had to bring mama over here," he said and I made a confused face when he said 'mama.'

"Grandma," he said as if he understood my confusion.

"Oh, No, problem. I am happy to be finally meeting you" I told him and he smiled.

"What took you so long?" grandma asked him and he smiled at her and bent down to kiss her.

"Everyone she is my date, Ms. Loana Ularu" he introduced and from the corner of my eyes, I watched as my mother-in-law rolled her eyes.

"Nice to meet you all again," she said in fake sweet coated tone and bent down as if she was some kind of princess.

"Again?" I heard my mom.

“She is Zachary’s former business partner’s daughter,” my mother-in-law answered her and my mom nodded understanding.

“What? I didn’t know that,” Kristian said as he walked with Loana to greet and hug everyone. Loana too greeted and hugged everyone and even ZACHARY.

“How are you?” she asked holding Zachary’s arm.

“I am doing good,” he answered and sat back down on his seat.

Kristian and Loana sat next to grandma and Kiara. Kristian sat next to his grandma while Loana sat next to Kiara glancing her way once and making a face.

“Who is she? Your sister?” Loana asked Zachary who raised an eyebrow at her.

“No, she is my daughter-in-law’s friend, Ms. Kiara Richmond” mom answered and that made her cringe her face when she heard the word daughter-in-law.

“Nice to meet you,” Kristian said glancing at Kiara from the back of Loana.

“Same,” Kiara being a foodie being stuffed her mouth with her food and just nodded at him.

“Oh, I totally forgot. I have a gift for you,” Kristian said as he fished a small box out of his suit and handed it to Loana to pass it to me. She did and instead of passing it to Kiara, she handed it directly to me. But as I took it she gave me a look.

I swear if she gave me any more of her looks then I’ll totally rip off her eyes using the fork.

Nevertheless, ignoring her cold hatred filled looks, I gave her a small smile and took the gift.

“You don’t really have to do this,” I said showing him the box.

“No, Actually I wanted to because I didn’t even present a gift for your wedding, consider it as a small token of love and gratitude for marrying my stupid brother,” he said which made Zachary huff at him.

Oh so, I guess he is kind of welcoming. An important lesson, Never judge a person by his looks.

“Don’t start it over here, I’m telling Kristian,” Zachary said and Kristian shrugged at him.

“Please, don’t call Zachary stupid,” Loana interfered chiding at Kristian and I looked at her. Kristian oblivious to anything just raised an eyebrow at her and I looked back at Zachary to find him rolling his eyes but when his eyes fell on me I looked the other side crossing my arms over my chest.

“Okay, so Kristian what will you eat? grandfather asked him and them other food for them.

As everyone talked to each other, I kept glancing at Loana to find her glancing at Zachary playing with her food. This irked me even more. First, Zachary lets her kiss him in the party, then he goes to her and have food which is prepared by her and then she is here glancing and

trying to flirt with every opportunity she got to talk to him. I got to know, that no family member actually liked her presence and that gave a little support to the burning feeling in my chest.

I looked at her, she had her black hair braided to the side and she was wearing a dress exactly like me but a different color. It was a royal blue with a thigh slit. She was taller than me and she had a sultry svelte figure. No doubt, she must be a model or something, I assumed.

“So, where do you both meet?” I asked the question to both Loana and Kristian but more to Kristian.

“Oh, we met yesterday in the art exhibition. We talked to each other and instantly he grew a liking for me and that is why he asked me my number and asked me for a date,” being the narcissist person she is she put herself first in every single I asked as if she wanted to show me that she is needed by men.

“I have an idea,” mother-in-law said all of a sudden gaining everyone’s attention.

“Why not go out for a small picnic tomorrow?” she asked and we all looked at each other.

“We can go out for a family picnic and then we can all together go out to visit some places in Romania,” she added.

“Mom, I don’t really think that it’s a good ide-” Zachary was cut off by Loana.

“Yes, it’s a brilliant idea,” she said and smiling as if she won a cup looked at Zachary.

“It’s been a long time since we have gone out for a family picnic and since everyone is present here, I really want to take Juliette and her family for a picnic,” mom said and I looked at my mom who smiled at her. Gale, dad, grandpa and grandma nodded agreeing with her which left no room for Zachary to answer with a no.

He sighed and fished his phone out of his pant pockets muttering “fine, let me arrange everything,” he said and got up from his chair and walked to the rail of the terrace to talk.

“What part of family picnic does she not understand?” Kiara said into my ears looking at an over excited Loana who literally jumped in her seat as if she won a lottery.

“See, Zachary can ever disagree with me. I said it’s a good idea and that made him change up his mind instantly,” she laughed but no one joined her. Only Kristian was the one who smiled.

“Bitch please,” I heard Kiara mutter.

“Excuse me? Did you say anything?” Loana asked raising her eyebrow at Kiara who nodded her head no and gave her a sarcastic smile.

Grandpa stood up and together he and grandma left to sit near the pianist. That left the chair next to Zachary’s vacated. Zachary walked back and sat back on his chair.

“Why are you not talking to him?” Kiara asked nudging me with her elbow.

“Why should I?” I asked drinking my champagne.

“Did you both had a fight?” She whispered and I shrugged in response.

“Maybe,” I said looking at him when he was typing something on his phone.

“Let me guess, is this because of the loud mouth snobbing woman?” she asked and I looked at her.

“Look, just lift up your ass and go to him. This bitch is not worth to be the reason of you two fighting. Go and resolve all your probl-” she stopped mid sentence looking at Zachary.

“What?“I asked and followed her gaze to find Loana already pulling the chair next to Zachary and sitting on it.

“I told you,” Kiara sighed leaning against the chair and looked back at me.

I looked at Zachary who kept the phone back on the table and looked at Loana. She smiled at him and spoke something to him which I couldn’t really hear because of the music playing in the background. Zachary answered her questions and nodded now and then whenever she laughed.

“This man brought her as his date and he is allowing her to stick around with another man. What type of man exactly is he?” Kiara asked but then I clutched the spoon tightly when Zachary laughed and got up. As I stood up, everybody’s eyes were on me. I lowered my head and excused myself for the washroom.

In the washroom, I paced around and stood leaning against the counter but then when my eyes fell on my own reflection in the mirror, I burst out crying.

“Why are you crying?” I wailed at myself looking at my crying state in the mirror.

“I don’t know,” I answered my own question.

“Damn, it hurts,” I cried and pull the tissue out of the roller and wiped my tears which were already ruining my makeup.

“For god sake, stop crying!” throwing the tissue paper at my reflection, I cried even more.

So, this is exactly how it hurts when the person you like, likes someone else. Thinking about it, I got to know that this was my actual real feelings. Emmett never really looked or even talked about any other woman in front of me making me believe that he actually and truly loved me. I trusted him, and that is how I never really got to know what jealousy actually felt. But when I feel it, I’m breaking. I am in even more pain than I was when I knew about Emmett being Nicholas.

I don’t really like it.

I sobbed and wiped the continuous streaming of tears as I continued to feel that pinching and burning sensation in my heart.

“Look at me, here I’ standing crying my eyes out and there he is void of any of emotions talking and laughing with her” I spoke to myself and as I was about to pull another tissue out, I heard a knock.

“Juliette?” my eyes widened hearing the familiar masculine voice who was the reason for my tears.

I pulled the tissue out and hurriedly, tried to wipe every smudged line of my eyeliner.

“Juliette?Are you there?” he asked knocking on the door again.

“Yes, I am” I answered and heard him knocking again.

“Are you crying?” he sensed it from my brittle voice.

“What is your problem? Go away,” I told him and the next moment the door flew open and he walked in.

“This is a ladies washroom,” I said shocked and angry at the same time pointing towards the door which he closed asking him to get out.

“I am done with you now,” he said as he walked up to me which made me take a few steps back and stood when stopped by the wall.

“Why are you crying?” he asked more in a tone as if he was accusing me of something.

“None of you business now out!” I snapped pointing towards the door.

“Listen, I don’t have any idea why all of a sudden you are behaving like this but you need to stop,” he warned.

“Or else what?” I challenged him by glaring at him.

“Stop that!” he argued now pointing a finger at me.

“You stop that!” I argued slapping his finger which angered him because his face contoured into an angry one and he got hold of me from my arm and turned me around shoving me to the wall.

“Enough of your drama now,” he whispered in my ear.

“Let me go,” I struggled against him but then he held and folded my right arm on my back twitching it painfully.

“Ow!” as a hiss left my mouth he loosened the grip but still didn’t leave me.

“You are going to tell me now, what exactly is your problem?” he asked through gritted teeth.

“I won’t,” being the stubborn woman I was, I refused to bow down in front of him.

“Fine, we can stay like this until we grow old. I don’t have any problem,” he said and gripped my forearm tightly making me whimper.

“Of course, you will do like you want, does my opinion, feelings even matter to you?” I used my other hand and elbowed him hard in his stomach causing a whoomph sound forming in his mouth but still, he didn’t let me go.

“Juliette!” he snapped and pushed me harder into the wall.

“Let me go, Zachary!” I tried to free myself wiggling against him but he didn’t free my hands that easily.

“Just look at you, you are so stubborn and different from all those other wome-”

“Other women?” I said cutting him off.

Oh now, he compares me to her.

This didn’t go well with me because the next moment I started crying, again. No matter, how much I tried not to cry before him, I always did. I sobbed and wept and I felt him loosening his grip and turned me around to face him. I looked at the other side of the wall and sobbed not able to control the tears any longer.

“Why are you crying?” he asked with a disbelieve look as he raked his hands through his hair and looked at me as if I had two head.

“Juliet-” he took a step forward but I raised my hands and shoved him back.

“Stay away! Leave me alone,” I said weeping and having stuttering breaths.

He pulled a tissue and forwarded it to me, I snatched it away from him and wiped my tears away.

“You know I can’t do that,” he sighed and said in a low voice.

“At least tell me why are you crying?” he urged me to answer.

“Did anyone tell you something that you didn’t like?” he asked I nodded my head no.

“Did anyone hurt you?” he asked again and I nodded my head no.

“Then?” he thought and then questioned “Did that Nicholas tried to contact you?” he asked all of a sudden anger burning in his eyes. I lit the fire in his eyes off by nodding no.

“Then what?” he snapped with irritation.

“You!”

“You are my problem,” I said in between my sobs.

"What? What did I-?"

"Shut up!" I said with annoyance."

"Fine, remain angry then," he said and got hold of my hand and dragged me out back to our table. I thought I would go back and sit with Kiara but instead, he pulled me with him but he politely asked Kiara to slip over to the chair next to her where Loana was previously sitting. Kiara obliged and slipped on the other chair sitting next to a confused Kristian and then he made me sit on Kiara's chair. He sat on my chair all the while holding my hand in his. Loana looked as if she was going to pass out. As if she never had witnessed Zachary holding hand of a woman. I tugged and tried to pull my hand away from his hold but the only thing that he did was to glare at me and he whispered into my ear "Don't make me do anything which I don't want to," he warned and that made me stop.

He made sure, to remain close to me the whole night not leaving my hand as if I was a spoilt stubborn kid. Even if I glared, tried to pry my hands he didn't let me go and the worst thing was when he dragged me to his car and made me sit next to him.

"You think you are the only stubborn one in this world? Well, get it in your mind. I'm even more stubborn than you and until you tell me what is the reason of your behavior I will make sure to I have you under my wings, under my watchful eyes." he said and I crossed my arms over my chest and looked out of the window to find everyone walking out of the restaurant but the expression of Loana made me little happy. Her pissed off expression as she marched to Kristian's car and hopped in all the while glaring our way.

Kiara and Jace joined them in their car while the rest remained the same and we all drove back off. Kristian would leave Loana in her house and then he would join us because he will be living with us.

Zachary slapped my thigh because I wasn't listening to him and that angered me. I glared at him and pinched the skin on the back of his hand. He hissed and glared at me.

He just can't slap a woman. Mannerless Jerk!

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 48

Juliette Pov

Mom asked me to pack the food in the basket as she herself remained busy filling up the water bottles. I kept the food in the basket and looked up when Zachary's mom walked into the kitchen humming a song. She wore an orange summer dress and a fedora. She looked extremely happy as she walked in humming and wiggling her eyebrows at my direction.

"You look happy Julia," mom asked and she nodded.

"Of course! I am really happy today because we are going on a family picnic after a long time. I just can't express my happiness," she clapped her hands and walked up to me inspecting my basket.

"Oh, and don't forget to take those blueberry jam too. I love them in my sandwiches," she exclaimed and I nodded smiling at her. I walked to the kitchen cabinet and brought out the jam bottle and kept it inside the basket.

"I am also going out for a picnic after a long time," my mother told her and she looked back at her.

"Really?" Zachary's mother asked and she nodded.

"Well, I bet you this will be the most happiest and memorable day in our life Jessica," she said and I looked at both of them.

"When have you both started calling each other using your names?" I asked and they looked at each other and then back at me.

"Last night," both of them said in unison.

"Morning," Kiara walked in and walked to the fridge and pulled out a bottle of fresh juice and gulped it.

"What happened to you? What are those dark circle under your eyes? Did you not sleep well yesterday night?" Zachary's mom asked Kiara and I turned to look at her to find dark circles under eyes which was quite unusual.

"What happened to your beauty sleep?" I laughed at her which made her roll her eyes at him.

"Some jerk kept on calling on my number disturbing me until I switched my phone off," she said and stifled a yawn.

"Must be from one of those lovers of yours," I winked at her and she glared at me.

"It's nothing like that!" she said from under her breath.

“Sure!” I mocked her and turned around packing my stuff. It was true though, Kiara had lots of fan followers who constantly try to woo and get her her as their girlfriend. And who wouldn’t? Undoubtedly Kiara was beautiful, talented and she belonged from a rich high-class sophisticated family. One thing about her was unlike me, she spoke of her mind. She did whatever she wished and liked and the only things that could ever scare her apart from ghosts is a gun.

She has a tragedy with a gun in her past which made her so afraid of guns. It’s like a phobia to her. She can’t be in the same room with a gun and I have already told about it to Zachary to make sure that he doesn’t pull his stupid gun out else I will kill him using his own gun.

Speaking of Zachary, we are still not on talking terms. How can I talk to him when I know that Loana is again coming today to join us and again I would have witness them getting comfortable and cozying up to with each other. I sighed when I finished with my packing.

“Are we all ready to leave?” mom asked all of a sudden jumping like a kid excited.

“No,” I heard Kiara mutter under her breath and I glared at her.

“Yes,” we all said in unison and I picked up the baskets as we walked out of the kitchen towards the front door.

“Give it to me,” Zachary said as he forwarded his hand asking me to hand him over the food basket. Instead of giving it to him I walked past him and kept it in the hood of his car by myself. When I looked back at him, he squinted his eyes at me and closed the hood all the while looking my way.

“Dad can we-” before I could ask Gale if me and Kiara could come with Zachary butted in “Go and sit in the front passenger seat,” he commanded.

“No,” I whispered yelled at him. Thankfully no one was looking our way or it would have been way too awkward to handle because they would have started asking us question about our behavior if we had a fight or something and I knew that like me, Zachary too had no interest of answering them anything about our relationship problem.

Relationship problem?

“Go by our own wish else I will have to use another method,” he whispered back through gritted teeth and Kiara nudged me hard by her elbow.

“Ow! What?” I hissed at her.

“Stop being so stubborn and sit in the front with him,” she hissed back at me.

“No, I won’t!” I argued.

“Yes, you will!” and the next moment she pushed me towards the front and opened the door and shoved me in.

“Cheater! You traitor! Whose side are you taking?” I crossed my arms over my chest and glared at her.

“Of course I am on your side and that is why I want to see you happy. How will you be happy? With him!” she answered her own question and shoved the door on my face. I shook my head at her and she mocked me by showing me her tongue from the outside to which I just rolled my eyes.

“You just understand when I ask you something to do hu?” Zachary said with anger evident in his voice as he got inside the car and sat in the driving seat. I looked out the window avoiding him. As I turned my head, I saw Kiara in front of our car placing the water bottles in the hood of Kristian’s car. Today, everyone was wearing comfortable and casual clothes. I was dressed in a white button-up shirt and sky blue jeans with my hair braided to the side and I was wearing a sneaker. Kiara was wearing the same just like mine, but instead, she paired up her jeans with a pink top.

Zachary, unlike other times, was also dressed casually. He was wearing a bottle green polo shirt with black jeans whereas Kristian wore a black t-shirt with short camouflage pants. Jace wore the same short shorts pairing up with a gray t-shirt and my mom wore a peach colored tunic top with black leggings. Gale and dad wore black polo shirts which Gale gave dad because they would be going for playing golf which was a few distance away from our picnic spot.

As we drove off to our picnic spot I watched as Kristian took another road, because he was going to pick up Loana from her house. I just wished she didn’t come because if she did then God only knows how pissed off I will be seeing her hanging out with Zachary.

In the vast grassy meadow field me and Kiara started unpacking the stuff and both of us placed the sheet under a tree for shadow and placed the food basket over it as we sat down and Kiara laughed seeing both of my mom clicking selfies and pictures of themselves near the lake.

“Be careful or else you will tumble down in the water,” Kiara yelled at them warning them when they went too close to the edge.

“We are adults,” my mom yelled back which made us roll our eyes at them.

“Yay, adults behaving like kids,” Kiara spoke and leaned back against the tree fishing her phone out of pant pocket.

“Not again,” she hissed which made me look back at her.

“What?” I asked seeing her angry face.

“This dude just doesn’t give up!” she showed me a number of miss calls she had on her phone.

“Who is he?” I asked and she shrugged her shoulders “I don’t know! It’s an unknown number and you know I don’t pick up unknown numbers,” she answered and turned her phone into flight mode.

“C’mon let’s click some photos,” she said and I nodded smiling at her. Switching the camera mode she took some pictures of mine and then I took some pictures of her. We even took some selfies and laughed hard at the weirdest one in which my hair blew up covering my eyes, with her made a sneezing face etc.

“What is taking Kristian so long?” I asked her to which shrugged.

“Maybe the snob princess is taking her time to get ready,” she answered which made me giggle.

“Talking about her, what is your problem with her? It looks like both of you dislike each other. Though I can understand your pointing of disliking her but what is her problem?” she asked and I heaved a sigh.

“I guess I will have to tell you then,” I told her and she nodded her in curiosity.

“What?” she said once I completed telling her everything. I told her everything from what I had heard in that party about her relation with Zachary to the very phone call when I heard her in the background.

“Go and ask Zachary right now about what he was doing with her so late in the night,” she ordered me and I crossed my arm over my chest.

“Never!” I said stubbornly and pulled out a sandwich and ate it.

“Give me one!” she said and I took out another one and handed it to her.

“Thanks and why not?” she asked as she took a big bite from her sandwich.

“Because then he will ask me why do I want to know about it. Then what will I answer?” I asked ad she rolled her eyes “Tell him that you like him and you can’t see him with some other wo-”

“No, No! Yes, I thought about it in the beginning” I cut her off and she cringed up her face in confusion.

“What? What are you saying?” she asked and with my eyes, I signaled her to look at her back and she looked behind her to find Zachary walking up to us.

“Oh!” she answered understanding why I changed the topic all of a sudden.

“Let’s eat now. I am hungry after taking so many pictures,” I heard Zachary’s mom and looked towards their direction to find them walking towards us. Gale and dad also walked to us followed by Jace and I shifted in my position freeing up some space for them to sit down. As they sat down on the sheet, my dad took the carpet and laid it down for the sheet was too small for all of us to sit on it. Mom and Zachary’s mom sat before me and Gale, including Jace and dad sat next to him on the carpet. Zachary walked up to me and picked up the basket and sat on its place next to me.

So he won’t stop bothering me?

I looked at him but then felt a nudge on my side.

“What?” I asked Kiara.

“Look what she is wearing!” she said signaling towards the front and everyone including me followed her gaze to find Kristian walking up toward our direction with Loana following him. It wasn’t Loana but her dress that made us look at her.

The woman chose to wear a high thigh slit burgundy colored maxi dress with a pair of stiletto and she had a smokey eye and red lipstick makeup on her face. The thing which was funny was the way she walked. Her stilettos dug into the grassy earth as she walked maintaining her balance but she was continuously bending to her left and right side because her stilettos weren’t helping her walk on the grassy field. As I looked at her and then turned to look at Zachary he already had his eyes fixated on me.

“Come with me,” he said all of a sudden and kept the basket on the sheet before him and then he held my hand and pulled me up with him leaving no room for me to say no.

As, I walked with him I looked back at Kiara who gave me a thumbs up sign and she made a kissing face as if telling me to kiss Zachary. I glared at her and looked back at Zachary who mistook my hand as a leash and me as a dog because he was literally dragging me with him.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 49

JuliettePov

“What?” I jerked my hands away from him and stopped in my place. He stopped in front of me and I watched as his shoulder rolled back and he sighed before turning to face me.

We were in a different part of the field away from our family and nearer to the lake. The sun was above us and the water in the lake shined because of the rays of the sun. Some people were boating while some were fishing. We stood under a tree and I crossed my arms over my chest looking towards the lake.

“Tell me,” he said out of nowhere which made me look back at him and I raised an eyebrow at him confused from the inside thinking what he meant by that.

“What?” I asked in a low tone. He shoved his hands into his pant pockets and pursed his lips as he threw his head backward and then slowly he looked back at me.

“We are not leaving this place until you tell me what is your problem,” he said and I turned around ready to leave but stopped when he held my hand stopping me from going.

“Leave my hand,” I said and wiggled my hand.

“That’s not the answer to my question,” he stated and that made me even angrier than I already was.

“I said leave my hand,” I looked back at him and said enunciating each word so that he would get it that I was not having it from him today.

“Fine,” surprisingly he said in a soft tone and let go of my hand and raised his hands in surrender.

“I won’t touch you but just answer the damn question,” he said and I rolled my eyes at him and turned around to leave but stopped when all of a sudden he moved in front of me blocking my way. I glared at him and took a side step but he mimicked my actions and finally, I gave up after three attempts and took a step back as I rolled the loose strands of my hair using my finger and put it behind my ear.

“Why are we here?” I asked once we stood silently.

“We are here because you will answer my qu-” I cut him off in the middle “I means why are we here in this place?” I asked circling my hands in the air gesturing the place.

“For family picnic?” he answered more like a question.

“Right, for a picnic. And what exactly is a family picnic?” I questioned to which he gave me a look which clearly told me that he didn’t get anything.

“Forget it! Nevermind! Look we are for fun and to cradle up some memorable days of our life, I have been through worse from these past few days and don’t spoil my mood now,” I said and I knew I was being a bitch but then he didn’t even react. I hoped to see anger resurfacing his features or him lashing out at me but nothing, which totally surprised me.

“So you are here for fun and happy memories?” he asked and I watched when he shoved his hand back into his pant pockets and pulled out his phone. I didn’t answer his question but looked the other way looking at the boat in which a kid and whom I guessed as the kid’s father were happily enjoying their day fishing and boating.

“Well, then I guess you are not the only who want happy memories,” he said and my head turned towards his direction in a jerk when he encircled his arm around my waist and pulled me close.

“What are doing?” I tried to push him and struggled against him. He raised his other hand in the air and I looked at it, to find him holding his phone up in camera mode.

“Taking a picture,” he said and as I turned to look at him to speak, I heard a click sound and I looked at his phone to find a picture in which he was looking at camera with me looking at his face.

“Give me that,” I ordered him and tried to snatch the phone from him. He raised his hands over his head. His height taunting and mocking my failed attempts of getting the phone. I raise my arm up in order to snatch his phone but then he pulled me closer. Closer to the point, where our face was only inches apart. His minty breath fanned my face causing a pure emotion taking birth inside my heart. All of a sudden, my heart raced against my chest and I felt my cheeks burning.

“What are you doing?” I jerked out of the little moment as I realized what was going on, I took a step backward and he let me go freeing me from his grasp. I turned around and took a step forward to leave but stopped when he asked ” Will you not answer my question?” he asked. I shook head negatively letting him know that I won’t but even though I wanted to tell him, I wanted to come forward by himself and tell me.

“Find it out by yourself!” I exclaimed and glanced over my shoulder at him before turning around and leaving.

“How did you two kiss? On the boat? Under the tree? Among the row of flowers? on the dock?” Kiara shot the number of questions at me once I reached back to her.

“Shut up Kiara!” I said and leaned against the tree and looked at Loana who sat on the carpet displaying her right leg and was busy texting something on her phone.

“Where is Zachary?” she asked looking here and there and then her eyes fell on me.

“Where is he?” she asked me.

"He is - oh there he is!" I said pointing towards the way from where I saw Zachary walking towards us.

"What was doing there? Alone?" she asked and I raised my eyebrows at her and heaved a sigh. She gave me a headache. How is it even her concern where Zachary went and what he did?

"Who told you that he was alone?" Kiara butted in and I looked at her signaling her not to open her stupid mouth and say something stupid but being the stubborn woman she was she rolled her eyes at me and said: "Juliette was with him."

"What?" Loana questioned looking confused.

"What were you doing with him there and that also alone?" she crossed her arms over her chest and looked at me giving me a nasty look as if she was accusing me of committing a crime.

"Duh! What can't she be with him" Kiara air quoted the word "alone?"

"She is his wife after all and why are you asking so many things about Zachary. Your date is there," Kiara pointed towards Kristian who was talking to Jace near the lake "Ask things about him and your concern should only be him not a married man, Mr. Zachary Sullivan," Kiara taunted her and I watched as the colour faded away from Loana's face and anger marred her face. Her jaws clenched and unclenched and she had her palms in a tight fist.

"Watch what you say! You are in no position to talk to me like that! Do you even know who I am?" she snarled at Kiara.

"Who are you? Enlighten me!" Kiara mocked her.

"You bitch! I am Zackie's girlfriend!" she said in pride and that immediately blocked the air in my lungs as I looked at her stunned by her words. Her revelation caught me off guard but most importantly, her words like were a sharp knife which went past my heart making it bleed.

"Ha! Have you seen your face bitch? This woman," Kiara pointed her finger at me "Is his woman, his wife! You are nobody!" Kiara said and Loana stood up from her place and Kiara held my arm and pulled me up with her.

"Wife? Are you kidding me? My Zackie loves me not her. I know he is married because of family pressure but soon he will be getting rid of this bitch. Do you want to see the signs of how much he loves me?" she asked smirking at us and then she took her her hand up and pulled her neckline baring her right breast to us. A gasp escaped my mouth as I saw the love bites on her skin that instantly clenched my heart.

"Firstly don't show us your sagging boob. My eyes will bleed now!" Kiara said closing her eyes as if her eyes were hurting her seeing the feminine of part of the woman who stood before us.

"Secondly, keep your dirty tricks to yourself. Juliette don't believe a slut like her have the number of men in their bed you can't even imagine. She is just trying to get to you and create

misunderstanding between you two!" Kiara warned me but it seemed as if the words were not reaching my mind. Loana's voice in the background when Zachary called me echoed my mind and my mind began to think about the impossibilities. But then my heart broke and shattered into pieces when I thought about it.

My eyes stung as the tears threatened to stream down but I refused to let it flow. I took in deep breaths and closed my eyes telling my mind that it wasn't true. The woman before me was just lying on my face and it was only because of the fact that I liked Zachary, her words were getting to me. Even if her words like a slap to the feelings that I felt for Zachary, I managed to control my emotions and opened my eyes glaring at her.

"Your wish!" I said and crossed my arms over my chest.

"It's not my wish darling it's his wish," she smirked at me. The patience in me was reaching its limit and I knew I would not let her go that easily with this.

"Control your filthy mouth and leave me and my husband alone!" I said as politely as I could.

"Oh so desperate you are! You are the only one who calls him that else let me clarify this to you! You mean nothing to him. I am the only one who he truly loves ad likes and I felt it when we slept the night," she smirked and closed her eyes as if she was reminiscing the experience "naked, wrapped up in each other's arms and every time he made love to me-" she couldn't even finish because I lunged at her and slapped her hard on her face.

"You bitch!" her face contoured anger and she raised her manicured nail trying to scratch my face, but I held it and slapped once again on her face and this time it was, even more, louder and harder. The skinny model didn't even have the power and strength to fight me but she managed to grip my braid and she pulled it painfully. I grab her hair and pulled her and using my filed nails I scratch her arms and face.

"Oh my goodness! Juliette!" I heard Zachary's mother but I didn't stop because she didn't let me go and neither did I let her go as we continued swearing and cursing at each other pulling hair and scratching each other.

How dare she, lying on my face?

She raised her hand to punch me but I got hold of it and turned it in the opposite direction painfully and a cry left her mouth when I did that.

"What's going on?' I heard Gale and pretty soon my whole family surrounded us as they circled us and I felt arms encircling my waist as I was roughly pulled backward. I grip around Loana's hair loosened and she made an attempt to punch me but like me, she was also pulled back by none other but Kristian.

“Stop it!” Zachary snapped at me when I struggled against his hold wanting to kill Loana. My hands and legs wagged in the air when Zachary picked me up from my back but then I was again placed down when I didn’t stop struggling against it.

“I said stop it!” he snapped and that made me instantly stop. I looked at him with wide eyes and exhaled and inhaled breath through my mouth. Anger was still building up from inside me. Loana’s words kept rotating around my head and that made me even more anger.

“No! Let me go!” I argued.

“Look, Zachary, what she did to me,” we looked back at Loana who sobbed pointing towards the scratches on her arms and face.

“Oh, you will get even more of those, you bitc-” Zachary cut me off as he turned me around to face him. His eyes filled up with anger, as he looked into my eyes.

“Enough!” he snapped at me.

“But Zachary she starte-” he didn’t even let me finish as he yelled on my face, “I said enough!” which made me instantly close my mouth.

“I have just enough of your drama. You will not speak a word now, do you hear me?” he said pointing his finger at me.

“Drama?” I asked inhaling air.

“Yes, drama! I let every stupid action of you insulting me thinking it as your innocence and naivety but now it’s just too much for even me to handle. I can’t believe this!” he said and looked at Loana who kept her head on kristian’s shoulder and wept dramatically.

“Whatever it is, say sorry to Ms. Ularu right now!” he said and my eyes widened hearing his words.

“No! Why should-”

“Juliette!” he raised his hand in the air as if he was going to slap me. His words didn’t hurt as his action did. He blamed me and he raised his hand on me. Gasps were heard when he rasied his hands.

“Zachary!” I heard Julia.

“Udolf!” even grandfather snapped at him for his action. But the damage was done. His lack of support, faith on me made me believe that he had not even an inch of respect and likeness for me. Why blame the other for your miserable fate? He didn’t even hear me, he didn’t even let me explain the side of my story, he had no faith on me, and he everything I did was like a drama to him. Not a single ounce of likeness for me but everything for Loana. Does this mean he loved Loana? Was Loana speaking the truth? Then it’s totally my mistake in here. I am the one who came in between them. i kept on thinking that Loana was trying to create misunderstanding in

between us but I was totally wrong. In fact, I was the one who was playing the gooseberry in between them.

Guilt washed up his feature as he lowered his hand and before he could speak I turned towards Laona and pursed my lips.

“I am sorry. Please forgive me!” I said and Kiara interrupted “But Juliett-” I stopped her by showing my hand in the sir asking her to stop. Thankfully she got the point and closed her mouth else, she would have made the situation even more thick if she opened her mouth. I would have felt even more guilty then I was already feeling.

Of course! I should remember that why I was with Zachary. It wasn’t a normal and love relation but a marriage deal where he was bound to save me in order to get the peron in his grasp who killed and destroyed his family member.

“Zachary are you kidding me? You are taking this woman’s side over your wife?” Julia asked his son and before he could answer I wallked towards Kiara and held her hand and pulled her with me towards the lake.

“Juliette come back here!” came bellowed voice of Zachary but I ignored him as I walked towards the dock holding Kiara’s hand.

As we were near, I left her hand and walked towards the end of the dock. All the while, tears streaming down my face.

“Juliette,” Kiara called me from behind softly but I didn’t even turn to look at her.

“Juliette!” she made me turn to face her and when she witnessed my tears she gasped and I saw the sympathy in her eyes but then she pulled me into a hug.

“Oh, Juliette! Please don’t cry!” she patted my back and I wrapped my hands and sobbed on her shoulders.

“That slut! Wait for me! I will just go and tell Zachary everything that she tol-” I cut her off “No! You won’t!” I said with a determined look holding her arms.

“What but why?” she asked in confusion.

“Because,” I put my forehead on her shoulder “They are in love,” I cried feeling my heart hurt thinking about it.

“Nonsense! She was lyi-”

“They are in love Kiara. Everything she said was true. Don’t you get it?” I pulled back and looked at her “He was forced to be with him. It wasn’t his choice to marry but it was a deal. It all makes sense!” I said and put the knuckle in my mouth.

“It all makes sense!” I sobbed and Kiara pulled me into a hug.

“I am so sorry Juliette. It all happened because of me, I shouldn’t have charged her,” she said sympathetically apologizing for a mistake which wasn’t even hers.

“Not your fault!” I said in a low tone and repeated it multiple times until my words turned into sobs as I cried being despair.

Severals days past by to that incident and it was certainly not the memorable day of my life. Zachary hardly came back home in the night. I even changed my room and slept with Kiara. Julia apologized to me multiple times on the behalf of her son but that made it even worse because every time she apologized I felt the guilt rising up. Because it was my fault after all. I should be the one who should apologize because I was acting like a fool behaving and acting like a stubborn teenager.

Zachary didn’t talk to me nor did I make any attempts to talk to him. In all this, my father was happy. He was very happy because he told me that he was getting hints of me liking Zachary but thankfully the incident back then proved him that he was wrong, and there is nothing in between me and Zachary except hatred.

But I don’t hate Zachary. Still, after all this, I didn’t hate him. I just couldn’t hate him because I knew he was just pulled into my life. It’s not his fault and that is why I don’t hate him.

It was the day where very one were going back to Zachary’s house. Zachary’s including mine were going with them to visit Julia’s and Gale’s house. I walked up to the door to bid them farewell as I was the only one who wasn’t going. I wasn’t feeling well and that is why I denied politely for going with them. My family would return in the night while Julia’s family will stay back in their house.

“Are you sure you don’t want to come, my dear?” Zachary’s grandpa asked me as he kept his hand on my head. I smiled and shook my head no at him.

“I will come some other time, for sure,” I told him and he nodded.

“Okay and dear,” he said but stopped in mid-sentence. I nodded at me asking him to continue.

“Please forgive my Udolf, I will talk to him! Believe it wasn’t what I taught to hi-”

“Grandpa,” I stopped him and smiled.

“It’s okay! Everything is sorted out now,” I said and watched as the sadness in his eyes didn’t leave instead it grew even more. I guess he saw behind my facade of smiling face. He was the ‘General’ after all.

“Please don’t give up on my Udolf,” he asked and that broke my heart. When there is no hope in our relation how could ever have any faith upon Zachary?

Nonetheless, I nodded to keep his words and he smiled.

“Take care,” he said and replied the same and watched as they got into the car and drove away.

Sighing, I closed the door and went back to the bedroom. Nobody except me and Hilda was in the house today. I went to the balcony and looked out to find the bodyguards guarding the house perimeter. Zachary went to his office, for work. He didn't join fo which I'm really glad because I didn't want Julia or grandpa talking to him about anything that I didn't want him to listen. Even Kiara went them. It will good if she maintained the distance from him else she would end up spilling everything before him.

It was already afternoon when I had my lunch and I walked back into my room. Unlike the other days, I felt really hot today. The temperature was high and I chose to wear a black short pant and blue stripped boyfriend shirt to ease my body temperature. I was just about to turn the Tv on when there was loud noise which came from the outside. I jumped on my toes and looked towards the balcony thinking what just happened.

Then I heard gunshots and people yelling and screaming. I felt the bile rising up as I walked to the balcony door and looked out of the glass door peeping through the curtains.

A gasp escaped my mouth when I witnessed a man killing our guards. But the fact was there was not only one man but many as they shoot and killed every guard as they made their way towards the house.

"Nicholas?" I said and clamped my mouth using my hand when I noticed him from one of those men.

"Ma'am" I heard the door opening and walked in a worried Hilda. Her face was pale and she huffed out air as if she just ran a marathon.

"We have been attacked," she cried and ran up to me.

"Hurry! You need to hide!" she cried and pulled me with her.

"No, wait!"

"Don't argue!" she snapped at me.

"I have already informed sir and he is in his way, now hurry you need to hide. Sir told me to hide you," she said and looked around thinking where must take me in order to save me.

"Bu-"

"Please! Don't say anything! Let me think! Oh, my goodness! What should I do?" she cried and then dragged me out of the room. Gun shots were heard everywhere and people screaming and yelling at each other was clearly heard as we made it up to the third floor and towards a room.

"Where are you taking me?" I pulled her to stop.

"It's not the time to argue. Please trust me and cooperate with me," she said and pulled me into a room.

“You will stay inside this room, make sure you lock up from inside!” she said and turned around to leave but I stopped her.

“Where are you going?” I asked and stopped her from going out.

“I need to stop them from reaching up her,” she said as she tried to free herself from my grasp.

“No! Are you mad? Stay here! It’s dangerous! You will die!”

She pried my hands away and shoved me backward. I stumbled on my own foot and fell on my back on the ground.

“Please forgive me, I am just fulfilling my duty,” she said and ran out of the old and dirty storeroom closing the door behind her.

“No-” I coughed and tried to get up “Wait!” tears blinded my vision as I stood up n my feet and walked towards the small open window and looked out. The window was facing the backside of the house and luckily I found no one under the window. But I could hear the gun shots and the scream of people. Guessing from the pitch of the scream I assumed that, people were dying. It was the scream of their plea and I placed my hands over my ears and closed my eyes pleading the Almighty to help and save the people and to stop it.

Twenty minutes later, everything stopped. I could no longer hear the scream nor any gunshots. As a ray of hope lit inside my heart thinking that it was over, but then it shattered into pieces when I heard rumbling and footsteps from outside my door. Clamping my hand over my mouth I looked around frantically searching for a place to hide.

“Did you find her?” I heard Nicholas’s voice and that made me even more frightened than I already was.

They have reached me!

“No, we checked every room even his study room for any type of secret passage but found none!” another man spoke.

“Did that woman open her mouth?” Nicholas asked and a gasp escaped my mouth when I thought about Hilda being captured.

“No! she isn’t opening her mouth. Your father is handling her!” the man said and as if it wasn’t enough the mention of his father made my heart pound against my chest.

Vito was also here?

“Go! check that room, I will check this room,” I heard Nicholas and then heard his footsteps nearing the room where I was hiding. I looked here and there frantically when my eyes fell on the window. I made a run for the window and looked out. The only thing that I found was a narrow beam beside the window. The beam looked as the only support for my life and I struggled to get out of the small window and carefully took baby steps as I walked towards the

side with my back facing the wall and my front facing the front open area. I did a mistake to look down and that knocked the sense out of me. I was standing in a narrow beam, three floors up from the ground with no help but the walls to be held as I took small sidesteps in order to get away from the damn window.

No! Don't look down.

You can do it, Juliette!

God, please help me.

As seconds went by I realized that I was going to die soon. Either in the hands of Nicholas or by falling off from a three floor high. If I lost my balance and managed to fell, the chances of me surviving with broken limbs and hands waved before my eyes and I shook my head even thinking about letting go and jump in order to escape them.

As I waited for my death to cocoon me, I heard gunshots again and that came from inside the room from where I had taken the beam for support. Guessing it as Nicholas firing the bullets in thin air for frightening me, I closed my eyes and waited for him to come and kill him. Prayers left my mouth as I chanted in a low voice praying to the almighty's to save me. But then I heard the voice, which I thought as Nicholas's turned out to be of Zachary.

What? Am I imagining Zachary at a time like this?

I cursed myself for being so weak and felt as beads of sweat formed on my forehead. It was like a slow motion, I felt sweat trickling down my forehead, I could even hear my own pounding heartbeat, heard the shuffling sounds in the background when my eyes jerked open hearing the particular man's voice.

"Juliette! You idiot!" he screamed and slowly when I turned my head towards the window I found him.

Half of his upper body was out of the window and he was looking at me with what I thought I would never witness in my life but worry filled in his eyes. Tears rolled down my face when I saw him as his words went past my ear and I watched as he forwarded his hand asking me to take it. As I cried, I shook my head no because I was too scared to move now. I thought I would lose my balance and end my life but then he encouraged me to take his hand.

"Juliette! Juliette! Look into my eyes. Just look into my eyes! Listen! Nothing will happen to you- No! No! don't close your eyes. Look into my eyes and just hear my voice. Come to me, Juliette! Yes, Come here! Take my hand! Just a few steps more. Yes, you are here. You ar-" he grabbed my hand and pulled me to him. He went in first and then pulled me in. Once I was in, I was pulled into a tight hug.

I was still in shock. I was petrified. As I looked behind him, there I saw him. Nicholas on the ground, with blood oozing out of his leg with Willie pointing a gun above his head warning him not to move.

"It's okay! You are safe now," I heard Zachary's voice and felt him caress the back of my head.

"I am here. It's okay now," he said softly into my ears as he embraced me tightly and soothingly caressed my hair. But I stood their limp with my arms on my side in his arms as I tears continued to roll down my face as I looked at a captured Nicholas and the gun.

Both Nicholas and Vito were finally caught. They had come to kill me and to get my money. Zachary found out that one of our guards was one of his man who gave them information about everything that was going on inside the house. Vito and Nicholas were just looking for the right time to get to me alone in the house with no shield or protection and as soon as everyone left they made it to me.

Not a single guard of Zachary survived but still, he managed to reach me on time with his men and took the charge. Max was also present there captivating Vito while both Zachary and Willie ran up to save me, or should I say to get Nicholas.

I was still traumatized by the event that took place with me being alone in the house. Hilda was safe and she sat gave me a glass of water as I felt my mom caressing the side of my face constantly saying me that they were here now and everything was okay. It turned out, my family including mom, dad, Jace, Kiara and even Kristian returned back as soon as Zachary informed them about my condition. It's already been fours hours to the incident but yet I am feeling the same anxiety inside me thinking as if I was going to die any soon.

Zachary took Vito and Nicholas to his study room followed by Max and Willie and some other men and they didn't come out of the room the whole four hours.

"Juliette, my baby. Everything is fine. Talk to me!" dad said as he knelt on his knees before me on the ground.

Jace was standing behind me, while mom sat on the left side on the sofa while Kiara sat on the other side holding my arm.

"Juliette baby girl look at me!" my dad begged and even though I could hear everything they said I just couldn't move from my place.

"Mr. Sullivan," I heard my dad as Zachary finally came out of his study room and walked to our direction. I didn't look at him but I knew he was coming.

"Take them!" I heard Zachary and the guessing from the curse and scream voices I assumed he wanted Vito and Nicholas to be taken somewhere away from where he could handle them all alone. It was good though. Just take them away from me.

“How is sh-” I cut Zachary in the middle as I finally made an effort talk and I looked up towards my dad saying “Dad?”

He looked relieved and he turned around and paid me his whole attention smiling at me as he waited for me to speak.

“Let’s go back home!” I said and watched his eyes filled up with joy and he took a step forward encircling me in his arms he said a loud ‘yes.’

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 50

Juliette Pov

People went past me as I walked down the five-foot way towards the bus stop. Out in Melbourne, I inhaled in the air as I walked towards the stop hoping to catch a bus to the State Library of Victoria. Catching the glimpse of the bus that was going to stop in the stop, I hurried my pace and thankfully I became the second person to climb the bus stair out of all those people who crowded behind me for the bus. I took the second-row seat of the bus as it looked it was the only vacant seat and slipped to the window side looking out of the running bus.

Four months has passed since I moved back with Dad to New York and then just in two weeks I ended up deciding that I would be shifting to Melbourne, Australia with Kiara away from all those painful and stinging memories of both the man whom I dedicated my heart. I still don't blame them but myself because I knew I was the only one to be blamed for all those things that happened in my life.

Firstly, I still can't believe how could I ever fell in love with a fake person and secondly, I was dumb enough to fall in love once again with a person who looked at me because I was only one of his responsibility or should I say a deal to which he was bound to look after. But foolishly enough, even though I knew that I managed to get my already broken heart into pieces when I could have taken some time and mend it back but curse my fate for making me fall head over heels over a man who never really thought of me more than a deal.

I pressed the bell of the bus when I saw my destination and as the bus came to a halt I walked down the stairs and walked towards the library. It turns out that moving to Melbourne with Kiara turned out to be the best decision that I have ever taken in my life. Away from my home, away from my relatives sympathetic glances because they still think I was the victim in that marriage and most importantly away from those memories of where I met both of them for the first time in my life. Though the second one was more dramatic and convincing of how my life has turned out after all that.

Kiara and my mom have been supporting me whilst dad still keeps on ranting that his decision to bring me back away from all those criminals was correct. He has decided that he won't ever put his foot back in that dark world for it brought nothing but pain to his beloved. That is the reason when I first told him that I wanted to move with Kiara to Melbourne, he was the first one to support me in my decision and he helped me shift. Even though it's been four months but still I just can't forget anything. His face, smile, eyes has just plastered in my mind and it's like no matter how much I tried to forget him but it always happens the opposite.

Averting my mind to books and research relaxed my brain and made me forget about all that has happened to me. I made my way towards the library hall and walked to the lady in the

counter for reissuing the book that I have reading recently. The book was 'Beyond Good and Evil' by Friedrich Nietzsche. It was a philosophical book and it kept me busy from my chaotic world. As the lady reissued the book and gave it back to me I walked towards the center of the hall to sit on reading it. I have already reached the last pages of the book and I wanted to finish it badly. As I reached the end of the book, I heard my phone beeping. Embarrassed as the readers near me looked at me with an annoying look, I mutter a quiet sorry and fished the phone out of the bag to find a text message from Kiara. What does she want when she clearly knows I'm in the library?

Kiara: "Come back home as first as you can!"

"Why? What happened?"

I turned the sound off and kept the phone next to me on the table continuing with my book but then the lights of my phone blinked indicating a text message.

"Just come back straight home, after you are done with your book."

"Fine! I'll be there in an hour though!"

"Okay."

After that, I kept the phone back in the bag hoping nobody to disturb me until I finish the book. It took me twenty minutes to finally finish the book. As I was done, I couldn't help but think how the author of the book wanted his readers to know about noble. The ending weak poem though pulled me completely into it which referred to how a noble soul sitting on a mountaintop wishing he had more friends. Unknowingly the book brought back sour memories. It somehow indicated the situation I was in. Even though I had Kiara as my friend but still I found myself lonely. It even gave me that daunty feeling where I constantly found myself in a place where I kept on imagining I'll be left alone for the rest of my life. As much it looks scary it is the truth.

Someday, Kiara will be moving on with her life wanting to create her own beautiful and happy life with her husband, kids, her family. I'm just her friend and as she is my only friend I shall be left alone with nothing but rusty memories. But then I slap my forehead thinking I was just being melodramatic, pulling myself into an ocean of weird thoughts which people named it as philosophy.

After I returned the book, I made my way out of the library and back towards the road. I wanted to walk back just spending some time with myself even though I have been doing the same things from these past few months. It was only me with myself. Catching a bus back home, as I reached the place which I have been calling home for this past few months. Kiara and I took a house in rent in Melbourne. It was a four bedroom house and had spacious rooms that I liked but the reason we chose to rent the house was that the house was surrounded by boundaries which gave space to roam inside the house perimeter. I loved to roam until late

night in the garden and sit near the glass door which faced the garden. And it was even more comfortable because the police station was near and the police officers continued patrolling the area late nights. It made us feel safe and our neighbors were Kiara's friends.

I used my key to get in but as soon as I got in something was thrown on my face and stunned by that a squeak escaped my mouth.

"You said an hour, but look at the time its already two freaking hours. What took you so long?" Kiara yelled at me as if she was my mother.

"Sorry, mom!" I rolled my eyes at her and looked at the dress in my hand that she previously tossed on my face.

"Where did you bring this from?" I asked trailing my finger over the green with a black pattern over its hem bodycon dress.

"Do you like it?"

I heard yet another voice and looked towards the source to find Mariana walking to us from the living room. She was one of our neighbors.

"Hey Mariana," I greeted and walked close to Kiara who took the dress away from me.

"I bought it for you," she said and I looked at her in confusion.

"What? But why?" I asked the blonde woman as she smiled showing her dimples indicating her eyes towards Kiara.

"Kiara!"

"What? Oh yeah! She went out for shopping so I gave her your measurements and told her to buy you a dress in her way back home," Kiara answered and handed the dress back to Marianna.

"Yeah, but why?" I asked.

"Because we are going out today in the evening and guess where?" she asked, her eyes shining with mischief."

"To the club!" she threw her hands up in the air excitedly and like a kid ran back into her bedroom.

"Kiara!" I followed her.

"I am not goi-"

"Oh cut that I'm not going crap. You are coming and that's final!" she said and turned around crossing her arms over her chest.

"Look I'm just not interested. I don't want to go but you all can go," I said and looked back when Marianna walked in.

“I have had just enough of you Juliette!” Kiara bellowed in agony.

“Do you even look at yourself? Oh my god! Juliette,” she walked up to me and turned me around by my arms and I looked at myself in the mirror before me.

“Look at yourself! Just look! You have just ruined yourself. And do you know what? You are keen on ruining yourself and you know it doesn’t you?”

“Look at all those eye bags because of your sleepless nights. Do you think we don’t know that you sit the whole night in the living room or roam around in the garden? Marianna has seen it, Eve has also seen it from her house’s window, do you think we are stupid? or do you think that roaming and crying the whole night will change everything? For god’s sake move on!”

“Your life isn’t over but you are the one who is keen on destroying your own life! What is your age? You are not even that old to think that you have just accomplished every goal in your life and now you will sit near the fireplace enjoying and reminiscing the happy days of your life. You’re even worse than a coward. Giving up on life so easily!” she turned me back to face her.

“So what if he loves someone else? So what if your marriage didn’t work? You fell in love for the second time for god’s sake. Second time. Don’t forget that asshole of a Nicholas. But still when you could fall in love with the man who never really reciprocated his feeling then why can’t you just move on and fall in love again. No! What am I even saying? No! Don’t just don’t take it in your mind,” she clutched her hair frustrated and bit the upper lips dismaying her own words.

“But I never really loved Nicholas and that is what Zachary made me realize!” tears pooled up in my eyes and I looked down hiding my tears feeling ashamed.

“Oh Juliette,” I heard Marianna whisper.

“Look Juliette!” Kiara held my face and made me look at her.

“Your life isn’t over,” she said with determination filled up voice. She enunciated each word as if she was trying to get it straight to my mind.

“Do you hear me? Your life isn’t over. Stop punishing yourself when it’s not even your fault, God dammit,”

“Do you think being melodramatic, forcing yourself not to sleep, crying countless nights thinking you failed in love, emerging yourself into philosophical and strange books, forcing yourself to stay away from everyone will help you?”

“No! it won’t but in fact, did you know what you have done?” she asked and looked at Marianna who shook her head positively at her.

“You have pushed the ones who were actually near to you. You pushed the people away who actually loved and cared for you. Ever thought about your mother? She calls me every day

wanting to know about you. What do you do? You avoid her calls because you don't want her to know that you are still suffering. Do you think that doesn't hurt her? She is your mother, you idiot. If not your mother then whom do even expect to think and care for you? Mr. Zachary Udolf Sullivan?" she glared at me while speaking.

"You know what? It's not even his fault! You never told really told him that you" she pointed her finger at my direction "actually love that guy,"

"How in the world would he have known? I told you multiple times that go and tell him but yo-"

"Stop! Just stop!" I put my hand on my ears not wanting to hear it.

"Oh you have to listen!" she forced me to listen to her as she pulled my hands away from my ears.

"It's all your faul-"

"I know that it's my fault! Do you understand? So stop lecturing me! I know that it's entirely my fault because I was stupid enough to fall in love with a man who never ever really liked me or let alone ever speak good about me. So just stop making me feel even more guilty," I cried and walked to the bed and sat on the edge putting my elbows on my knees and hiding my face into my hands.

"See? Did you see that Marianna? She still doesn't get it!" I heard Kiara complaining to Marianna.

"I know! Just relax," Marianna spoke.

"She just doesn't get it that at least we care for her," Kiara's voice broke at the end and even though I heard her I refused to look at her.

"Her mother cries for her, her brother worries for her, her father thinks about her and here I am like a fool I'm just wandering around her. Every day it has been a duty for me to make her eat something, drag her to bed to sleep thinking that she would be sick if she doesn't have some rest, do you know this that like a joker, I try to make her smile by acting foolish around her? Every single night I read jokes from the internet thinking that I would speak it before her the next day during the breakfast and I don't really hope her to laugh but at least I would see her smiling but do you know what she does? She keeps on ignoring me and remains to play with her God damn food until it becomes cold and finally she throws it into the dustbin. And to my foolish jokes, all I get is a nod and quiet hum. This is the place of mine in her heart. I am just nobody," Kiara spoke and finally broke down into tears with Marianna consoling her.

"I go to my work and when I come back tired and fed up with the world, I have to deal with her in the house. You know she can't cook! It's totally fine with me but I can cook. When I come back expecting that at least she would have eaten whatever I made for her, do you know what I

get? I find my food untouched. This is the thing she keeps on doing every single day. She thinks she has the only miserable life. What about me? Does she ever care about me? Did she ever ask how am I? Does she even know that the reason I shifted to Melbourne away from everyone because all of a sudden my parents whom I have kept on thinking as the perfect couple is not even a couple!" she yelled in frustration and as I heard that my head automatically whipped to her direction.i

"What? Shocked? Are you thinking why I have never told you this? Well, guess what I tried! I fucking tried! But you ignored me and continued to be drawn into your melodramatic shitty world," she snapped at me.

"My parents never really married each other. And my mom is not even my mother. I got to know this after you were gone with Zachary that I was born to Mrs. Delilah Richmond but not to Ms. Lizzie Richmond. My real mother left me with my father because she got to know about his extra-marital affair with his secretary. She left a newborn behind and truly like you devastated that she failed her marriage and love, she fled away. But thankfully my father understood it finally that she was his actual love of his life and though he didn't marry his secretary still he kept her with him making the whole world believe that she was his actual wife. Thankfully, Lizzie whom I have been thinking as my mom my entire life is far better than my real mother and she loved me more than my own mother could have ever loved me. I actually feel bad for her, because what did she ever get? Nothing! My father never married her and she never really had any child of her own because of some health problem. My real mother fled away only because she couldn't bear the betrayal and hurt she felt but in all this, she forgot about me. I just can't even believe my father. I just don't understand this shit that Man is polygamous? Infidelity was the cause of the situation that we are today," she cried.

"But still, in all this chaos I kept on thinking about you thinking that one day you will look right past me and you will help me deal with the situation. But all I have been doing is to wait. I have just been waiting and waiting for you to move on, to come back to us, but no- you are just too busy with your own life. What is this?" she yelled as Marianna tried to relax her.

"Fine! if you can't help me I won't help you. Why should I waste my life with all this? I want to be happy and I will make sure nobody gets into my way in between me and my happiness. I have had just enough of everyone," I watched as she angrily wiped her eyes and walked to the mirror and she searched for something.

She picked the eyeliner up and attempted to apply it on her eyes but failed miserably with the liner smudging her eyelids because of her trembling hand and continuous blinking of eyes as she forcibly stopped herself from crying any further.

"I said I will go to the club today and I will. I just don't care if you come or not. But for me? I have made up my mind I will not let anyone ruin the time of my life. I am going to enjoy it and nobody can stop me. I don't car-" she stopped and all of a sudden burst out into tears and angrily scribbled on the mirror using the liner.

“Oh, Kiara!” Marianna tried to stop her but she threw the liner on the floor spilling the black liquid on the ground and ran into the bathroom.

“Juliette,” Marianna looked at me begging me through her eyes.

I wiped my face and stood up from the bed and took the dress that was on the chair. Walking into the bathroom, I watched as Kiara continuously splashed water to her face.

“I don’t have any shoes to wear with this dress,” I said after I cleared my throat to get her attention.

She stopped splashing the water and turned the tap off as she looked at me through the mirror. She kept both of her hands on the counter and looked at me cautiously with red puffy eyes.

“Wear mine then,” she said and it was enough for me to throw my arms around her neck as I put my head on her shoulder and hugged her saying countless sorry’s for my behavior.

“Forgive me. I am so sorry. I was ignorant,” I said and she put one of her hand on my back and patted me lightly.

“It’s okay,” she whispered.

“I have decided!” I pulled away from her and wiped her face using my right hand.

“No more of crying. Truly speaking, I also have had enough! I’m tired now and even though I just can’t forget anything I’ll try my best to move on,” I said and finally watched as the sides of her lips curved up.

“Really?” she asked slowly.

“Yes. After all, as you had said before, I am young,” I winked at her and she laughed.

“It’s going to be the best day of our life,” she smiled.

“Of course it will be! So should I take it in that everything is okay between you two now?” Marianna said poking her head into the bathroom.

“Yeah!” we said in unison.

“So shall I call Eve and Tess now? They have been waiting the whole day for the club,” she told us excitedly and I nodded. She smiled and pulled the phone out of her jeans pocket and called them to our house.

They were in our home in just five minutes. All they did was to run to our house as they were our neighbor.

“Alright! To the best day of our life,” Tess said as she forwarded her hand for us and we followed her and like a school kid kept our hand on her and cheered shouting and laughing at each other.

After that, all we did was home beauty session which included manicure and pedicure. Facial and refreshing and diminishing the dark circles using cucumber slices while I ate some of it much to Tess's dismay. We helped each other in makeup and got ready before the time. Eve was going to drive us there and for that, we were all truly grateful to her. A cab was a bad idea and we made a deal that none of us will drink like a drunkard. We will only drink as long as we could hold ourself and come out of the club totally fine.

Eve was actually engaged and her fiance was a doctor, he couldn't join us because of his work. Tess's boyfriend will also not tag along because she warned him that it was totally a girl's night out. Marianna was actually like Kiara with no boyfriends. She was busy building up her career same as Kiara.

I looked at myself. Tess had curled up my torso length grown wild hair into wavy curls which added more volume to my hair and I actually looked different.The cucumber remedy was actually worth it. My dark circles minimized and the concealer did a good job totally hiding it. The dress clung to me like a second skin but it wasn't uncomfortable. The hemline ended up right above my knees and I matched the dress by borrowing Kiara's black stiletto. My eyes popped out because of the smokey eyes makeup and the nude brown lipstick enhanced my natural beauty. The only problem was the plunging neckline. It was deep but reached the middle part of my chest showing off little too much for my liking and to the top of that Kiara made me wear the push-up bra. Even though I looked hot, but I couldn't help it because my hands would automatically make its way up trying to pull the neckline up.

"Will you stop?" Kiara gave me a distasteful look.

"What? I can't help it. It's too low" I complained as I tried to pull the neckline up.

"Low? You call that low? Then what about my dress?" Tess asked and I looked at her.

She was wearing a white fit and flare dress but the only attraction in her dress was her neckline which went down to her bellybutton.

"She will probably call you naked," Marianna commented which made everyone laugh except for me and Tess.

"Shut up!" we said in unison.

I looked at Kiara while Eve drove us to the club. Remorse and shame filled up inside me because I failed to be the perfect friend. She was there for me when I needed her but what did I do? I ignored and blocked her out. How could I be so ignorant? How could I not see right through her fake smile?

I sighed and smiled when she glanced at me. She was wearing a baby pink colored bodycon dress with a studded neckline. She looked absolutely gorgeous with her hair down into soft waves and minimum as compared to no makeup look.

“What?” she asked when she caught me staring.

“Nothing,” I smile and I watched as she opened her mouth to speak something but stopped when her phone rang.

“God Dammit!” she cursed and everyone except for Eve turned in their seats to look at her.

“What?” Eve asked looking at her through the rearview mirror.

“This guy just doesn’t understand that I am just not interested,” Kiara complained as she typed furiously on her phone.

“Did that guy texted you again?” asked a bewildered looking Tess.

“Yes, he just doesn’t get it” Kiara snorted and typed something replying to that guy’s text.

“Who is he?” I asked

“Stranger”

“What is his name?”

“Anonymous”

“What does he do?”

“Keeps on irritating me with flirty and irritating cliche lines,”

“Where does he live?”

“Anonymous”

“Block him!”

“This is his probably twentieth new number”

“Change your number!”

“My bank accounts and work related stuff are linked with this number. I can’t do that! It will take time and I am lazy.”

“Well then ignore his texts”

“He will call me until I reply.”

“What does he want?”

“To meet me.”

“Why?”

“He says he has fallen for me from the day he saw me. But you what? I don’t even bloody know his face!”

“Then go meet him and sort this out!”

“What if he is a psycho. What if he kills me? Even though I have the Silver belt in Karate I don’t think I could fight a monster or a creepy Psycho,” Kiara said and I rolled my eyes at her.

“You have never learned Karate du!” I remarked.

“Yes, I have duh!” she rolled her eyes back at me.

“Oh really? From where?”

“Of course from the internet!”

We all groaned at her as she looked at each of us asking what.

The music was loud bashing into my ear as I put my hand over my ears but laughing enjoying the beats when we entered the club. People were dancing, drinking enjoying and the happy surrounding made me realize what I was actually missing. I actually felt better after a long time. Surrounded by happy people actually made me feel better and I was thankful to Kiara and my girls for dragging me out here. We drank a little and made our way to the dance floor to dance. Kiara kept on on dancing and showing her moves shaking her head and singing along with the song. I just moved in synchronization with the beats and bobbed my head whenever the DJ played my song.

Some guys asked Kiara out and she ignored them as if they were some plague.

“Kiara! That was rude!” I whisper yelled at her when she chose to ignore the guy who politely asked her to dance with him.

“What? I don’t think so! I am not leaving my girl alone,” she winked at me and I rolled my eyes even though I laughed at her.

“Okay, I’m tired now. I will just rest my feet for some minutes,” I yelled against the music and Kiara nodded getting my voice.

“Fine! I will join you in some minutes,” she replied yelling back and I nodded before making my way out of the dance floor dodging the staggering drunkards and sweaty people.

As I walked towards the couch in the corner a man walked past me in a hurry but as he went past me he collided with another man and I saw as his wallet fell on the ground from his jacket. I picked up his wallet and was about to give him but found the man staggering out of the club. He was swaying and his body language totally indicated me that the man was intoxicated but his wallet was in my hand.

I called for him to stop but due to the loud music he was unable to hear me and ignoring my voice he walked out disappearing from my sight. I looked at the wallet in my hand and then looked back at Kiara who was dancing like a maniac enjoying her time. I sighed and thought

that I would just return the wallet back to the man and run back in. As I made up my mind, I hurried out following where he went.

The cold air hit my body as soon as I took a step out of the club. It was already late and I looked around searching for the man. From far away, I caught the glimpse of the man's jacket and watched as he walked towards the car in the parking lot. He was staggering and my mind screamed at me not to go near him for he could be dangerous. I had not yet seen his face but somehow my heart told me to follow me. Reluctantly, I took a sprint in his direction and slowed up my pace when he stood keeping a hand on the hood of a car probably balancing himself.

"Hey!" I called to him.

"I have your wal- woah! Careful!" and he stumble on his own feet and fell backward towards my direction. I ran up to him for his aid as I watched the man groaning and turning around still on the ground using his hand to push himself up but failing miserably.

As I ran up to him and stood right before him thinking whether to touch him or not I chose to rely on my vocal cords as I asked him "Hey are you alright?"

The man stopped groaning all of a sudden and laid down stiff in his position. His behavior got me worried and before I could ask him anything else he moved his head up making me gasp as I saw his face.

"Za- Zachary?"

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 51

"Za- Zachary?"

I looked at him stunned and startled to see him all of a sudden before me. He pushed himself up and squatted in his position looking up at me with widened eyes as if like me he was shocked to find me standing before him. It felt as though I had left him just yesterday but the facial hair which I had never seen before in his face, eye bags as if he had not slept for days and the emptiness in his eyes proved me that it had been so many days since I had met him.

"Ju-Juliette?" he voice. Oh, his raspy yet husky voice reached my ears and it was enough to break me out of my step proving that I wasn't dreaming. The man was right before me, with his knees down and head up looking at me. The man was real.

But the disbelief look in his eyes and his facial expression shocked me because it was probably the first time ever when I was actually seeing some expressions in his face apart from the regular stoic, stern expression.

What is he even doing here?

"S-Sir" I heard someone yelling and looked towards my side to find none but Willi running to where we were. That brought me out of my state and I looked back at Zachary who was still looking at me as if I were some ghost. Finally, I saw movement in his body as he slowly tried to raise his hand up as if he wanted to touch me but before he could do that I took a step back which resulted in him to stop his action in mid air.

"Juliette?"

Exhaling out the air from my mouth I looked at the wallet in my hand.

So, it's his I guess.

"You dropped it back there. I just wanted to return it to you," I said as I forwarded my hand for him to take the wallet. He grasped the wallet and as he took it from me I turned around and started walking back towards the club in order to gather up my girls and leave the place.

"Wait! Juliette!" I heard him and that was enough for me to break. My hands formed in tight fists and my lips trembled as the tears fell down my cheeks but I refused to stop and look back. I continued to walk until I saw Kiara and asked her to leave. At first, she started to fight with me but then when she noticed my tear stained face and my expression, even in her tipsy state she managed to get a hold of herself and she got hold my arm as she turned around searching for the other girls.

"What happened to you all of a sudden?" Tess asked as she walked to her car looking annoyed.

“Shut it, Tess!” Marianna hissed at her. Marianna was the only one who was still in her sober state while Tess swayed while she walked with a frown on her forehead.

“I was just saying,” Tess complained and I felt Kiara squeezing my arm. I looked at her to find her looking at me.

“What’s wrong?” she asked softly.

Should I tell her?

“N-Nothing,” I said and looked at my feet as we walked to the car.

What do I have to meet him again? I thought everything is finished and just after months of suffering when I finally thought about moving forward I face him again. Just why? Why does he have to show up before me again? Was it not enough?

So why?

“Juliette!” I choked on my own breath when I heard that voice.

“Juliette wait!”

Zachary.

I thought he left.

“Listen to m-”

“Let’s go, guys!” I said and pull the door of the car open in order to get in.

“Hey, someone is calling you!” Marianna said as she looked at me from the driver’s seat and I felt Kiara again squeezing my arm but this time it was a tight grasp.

“Isn’t that Zacha-” I cut her off and went inside the car.

“Let’s go!” I asked Marianna and she looked at me and then perhaps towards Zachary who was probably strolling towards us. The other girls looked confused but chose to be quiet and got in before Marianna again looked at me through the rearview mirror wanting to make sure if I wanted to leave even after being called countless times by Zachary. I nodded at her and reluctantly she ignited the engine and we drove off. I could still hear his faint voice as I leaned against the window and chose to close my eyes for a bit.

Just why?

What is this chapter of my story?

The drive back to home was quiet. Everyone kept quiet as Marianna drove us back. Tess would glance at me with a question look still wanting to know about Zachary. I chose to ignore her and I knew Kiara was surely going to interrogate me once we reached back home.

What a drag.

Why is my life like this?

The street lights had my whole attention as I leaned my head against the car seat and looked up at the dark sky counting the street lights that we passed mindlessly in hope of averting my mind from him. But I guess it was useless. He was my mind after all. How can I even avert my mind when he has already taken over it since the time I have fallen for him.

“But I got to say this he was hot!” Tess said all of a sudden making me sigh.

“Shut up!” Kiara said and the drive back home fell into a silence once again.

“Juliette!” I took in a deep breath ignoring Kiara who was walking behind me towards my room.

“Leave me alone!” I said feeling low.

“Will you tell me what is going on?” she asked with a tint of irritation in her voice which made me stop in my tracks right in the entrance of my room.

" I’ll let you know once I found out myself what’s going on,” and with that, I pushed the door shut not wanting to deal with her questions. At the moment I just wanted to be left alone.

“Not again!” I heard her voice from the outside and minutes later she left. I slid down onto the floor with my back against the door as I wrapped my arms around my knees and put my head on my forearm feeling drained out.

His eyes kept barging into my thoughts. The disbelieving look on his face and his condition. What has been up to all these days? Is he really with Loana now? That shouldn’t be any of concern though. But still...I just can’t forget everything this easily. But I know, I must erase him out of my mind, thoughts and..and... God damn it! How will I erase him from my heart?

Why? Just why is it so hard for me not to think about him? Why did I even fell for him? Why did he even do to make me fall to this extent in love with him? So why am I the only one suffering?

I put my hands on my ears as I heard my own self mocking at me. It was no one but me who was mocking the existence of me. I knew nobody was to be blamed for everything that has been going with me but me. Just why does he have to show himself to me after so many days? I gritted my teeth and hit the wall next to. The pain that I felt when I punched the wall was nothing compared to what I was going through right now. Just nothing.

~

Past three in the morning. All I have been doing is staring the ceiling blankly. No matter how much I tried I just couldn’t sleep. Turning into my side I looked at the sky through the glass window next to my bed. It was a full moon day. Everything was clearly visible because of the moonlight. It was a silent outside and as I gazed at the moon, I couldn’t help but feel lonely. The

calm and peaceful night was like a curse for me. Because it didn't help but get my wounds even deeper as the silence around me made me think more about him. I just couldn't get him out of my mind.

Draping the shawl around me, I walked out of my room wanting to get fresh air. The rooms were dark but I knew my way as I was habituated to it. As I passed Kiara's room I stopped in my tracks when I heard some mumbling. The door to her room was open slightly ajar and I peeked inside to find her strangled with the sheet as she sleep talked to herself. I sighed as it was her childhood habit of sleep talking and I opened the door and walked in.

"Tell me what is your problem ummmm tell me. I can solve every problem" she mumbled and a smile cracked onto my face as I saw her scratching her back and then kicking the sheet out of the bed.

"I guess old habits never change," I mumbled to myself as I picked up the sheet and covered her.

"Tell me" she kept on mumbling.

I felt bad because of me she was also having mental stress. As if her family wasn't enough I burdened her with my behavior and problems too. As I turned around and walked out of the room I stopped in my tracks when I heard her "Don't worry I think he loves you too."

"That was a thing which would happen only in dreams Kiara," I muttered and walked out before closing the door behind me.

I pulled the shawl to myself as I looked out of the glass window. I didn't really feel like going outside today for a walk. The police car drove by patrolling the region and I couldn't feel bad for those officers who work hard during the nighttime just for our safety. They are the true heroes.

My phone beeped and I looked back towards the sofa where I put it seeing a message pop up. I ignored it thinking it must be from the customer care but then as I turned back a gasp escaped my mouth and I lost my balance and stumbled backward but held the edge of the sofa stopping myself from falling.

"Zac-Zachary?" I said out loud when I saw him standing right behind the glass window before me.

What the hell?

Where did he come from all of a sudden?

How does he know where I live?

Why is even here?

A lot of questions popped into my mind as I took in his form. He was wearing the same black suit with few of his chest button undone, hair was messy and he looked as if he was in some kind of trouble.

“Zachary?” I still couldn’t believe my eyes. He scared the life out of me. He caught me off guard when I turned around only to find him looking straight into my eyes standing quietly right behind the glass.

“Wha-What?” words were not forming in my mouth but I could feel the rising pulse and I swallowed the lump in my throat.

I stood straight and took a few steps forward, still not believing it.

He stood there quietly staring at me as I walked forward. But as I reached near to the window, he placed his hand on it from the outside and leaned closer.

“Juliette, its you!” he spoke and his voice felt as if he was breaking down. His state made me confuse yet worried. What was with him? Why is he like this?

As I waited for him to speak further, my patience level drained out when he didn’t utter a single word. It was when I broke out of my state and placed my hand on the window.

“What are you doing here at this time of the night? And how did you even get inside the boundary?” I asked but all he did was stare at me.

“Zachary!”

“Zachary!”

“It’s you! Juliette,” he spoke and I stopped asking him questions.

“What is wrong with you?” I asked even though I hoped no reply from his side still he opened his mouth to say: “Open the door and let me in!”

“What?” I asked incredulously.

“Open the door!”

“No! Just leave!” I said and turned around to leave but he banged on the glass window like a maniac.

“What do you think you are doing? Are you mad?” I hissed at him.

“Let me in!”

“No!” I said and turned around to leave. As I walked towards my room, I gasped and stopped in my tracks and looked the glass door towards the left with wide eyes. There he was huffing as he looked inside. He ran all the way to the other side of the house to the glass door.

“What do you think you are doing? Just leave Zachary!” I said and as I walked towards him he coughed and the moment collapsed down all of a sudden stopping the breath out of me.

“What?”

“Zachary!” I screamed and ran to him. What just happened? Why did he collapse? As I ran I could feel my eyes watering looking at his collapsed form on the ground.

Undoing the lock, I opened the door and knelt down next to him and held his arm “Zachary! Zachar-”

“I knew it!” a gasp escaped my mouth when he held my hand and looked at me.

“W-What?”

“I knew that you care for me don’t you?” he asked and I looked down at him as if I just saw some ghost.

“What is the meaning of all this?” I gritted out and jerked his hand away as I got up and turned around to go back. That idiot. Who does he think he is? How dare he trick me? And just look at me how shameless I am. I am still running to him like a mad woman who is deeply in love with her husband. Well...

As I turned to shove the door, he stopped it and tried to push it open.

“Just what do you think you are doing? Stop it!” I hissed at him as I tried to shut the door.

“Move aside and let me in!” he said and effortlessly pushed the door and barged in with me taking few steps back as he shut the door behind him.

“Just who do you think you are barging inside somebody’s house like this in the middle of the nigh-”

I was engulfed into a tight hug as he buried his face in the crook of neck nd held the back of my head and waist stopping me from talking any further.

“Wh- What?” is what formed in my mouth out of shock.

“Who is shouting?” I heard Kiara and looked at the side from above Zachary’s shoulder to see her rubbing her sleepy eyes and holding the pillow to her chest as she yawned and walked out of her room but as she realized what was going on she stopped in her tracks and looked at us with wide eyes. Then she realized who the person was who was still embracing me refusing to let go of me.

“Oh my god! I am sleeping!” she cracked a nervous yet weird laugh as she took few steps backward. I raised my hand in her direction wanting to stop her from leaving me alone with Zachary but she kept on mumbling “I am still sleepin? Oh my God!” and vanished into the dark and shut the door close.

Kiara I am going to kill you!

“W-What are you doing?” I realised he was still clinging to me. I tried to push him but to no avail did he budge.

“Let go Zachary!” I pushed harder.

“Never!” he wrapped both of his arms around my waist and pulled me even closer blocking the air out of me. But in that position the blocking of air out of my lungs didn’t shock me but his words did.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 52

“Are you drunk?” I managed to mumble.

“Yes, you are!” I said once I smelled the alcohol on his shirt and breath.

“Let go!” I tried to pull away fighting with my own inner feelings and resistance of not wanting to be separated from him.

“Stay in my arms,” was what he said and I felt him stroking my hair.

“What are you doing? Here?” I mumbled putting my forehead on his shoulder as I felt him stroking my hair tightening his grip on my waist.

“I don’t know!” he replied.

“What do you mean by you don’t kno-”

“Ssssh!” his clicking of tongue silenced me.

“You sure talk too much!” he whispered into my ears sending a shiver run down my spine.

“You smell of alcohol!” I said as I inhaled the smell of alcohol from his mouth because of our close proximity.

“You smell good,” he inhaled deeply as he rested his chin on my shoulder humming in response. I didn’t really understand whether to feel good about it or get worried because of the fact that he was being unusually open and was speaking whatever I had always wanted to hear but couldn’t.

“Let go! You are drunk,” I tried to push him but more I struggled the more iron-like grip he formed around my body.

“But I am in sense,” he complained.

“You don’t even know what you are speaking!” I retorted.

“And I’ve heard that a drunk mind speaks a Sobers heart!”

His statement made me stop struggling against him and slowly I looked up to look at his face inches away from mine. His breath fanned over my face and I realized that not only was he drunk but he was tired and sleepy too. The bags under his eyes indicated how tired he was and the smirk plastered on his lips made me wonder what was the thing that made so happy at the moment.

“Zachary!” I gasped all of a sudden because of the voice coming from behind me. Still, in Zachary’s arm, I turned a little and recognized the owner of the familiar voice.

“Willi?” I said astonished to see him after a long time.

And Zachary? Since when did he begin to call him using his name?

“Look who do I have here!” Zachary said and leaned against me putting his body weight on me which made me bend backward. His weight gave stress on my back and that kind of hurt me.

“Gaaah Zachary hold yourself!” I panicked as I tried to push him away from me.

“Zachary!” Willi was right next to me in a second helping Zachary move from me.

“No!” Zachary slurred stubbornly as he tried to hold my shawl and drag me back to him.

“Man you are drun-” Willi was cut off by the police’s siren outside my house. It was the patrolling team.

“Quick! Let’s go inside!” Willi said and even before I could respond he carried a drunk Zachary inside the house while I was dragged inside because of Zachary who was clutching my shawl like a stubborn monkey.

“Always barging inside!” I muttered as I tried to free my shawl from Zachary’s hold.

“Oh man!” Willi muttered as he made Zachary sit on the chair.

“I have to take him back to his hotel room now,” Willi said and put his hand around Zachary’s shoulder trying to make him stand but Zachary being too stubborn even to co-operate shook his head rocking to and fro in his seat and clutched onto my shawl even more tightly.

What side of him is this?

“I am sorry Juliette. Forgive him for his behavior but he is not in his right state of mind,” Willie said and all I could do was to heave out a sigh.

“It’s not your fault!” I muttered and watched as he gave me a faint smile before returning to his act of trying to make Zachary stand on his feet.

“Juliett-tte” came out Zachary’s slurred voice.

“Tell me, how did you both find me here?” I asked as I recalled the question that has been nagging me in the back of my mind since the time I saw Zachary outside my window.

“And since when have you started calling him by his name? Are you both I mean kind of friends now?” I asked crossing my arms around my waist and rubbing my left arm, I looked back at Zachary who had his eyes closed but was still holding onto my shawl.

“Long story short, you can call us friends and about that previous question I’ll tell you everything about it tomorrow,”

“Or should I say Zachary himself will tell you about it tomorrow when he is sober but right now we need to move out back to our hotel,” he said and I nod understanding but then it struck me and I gasped.

“Tomorrow? You mean to tell me that he is going to meet me again tomorrow?” I asked incredulously and glanced back at Zachary who was now leaning against me with his head on the side of my waist.

“Of course!” Willi shrugged as if I was asking him a stupid question.

“Well, why would he even want to meet me tomorrow?” I asked throwing my hands in the air. The mere feeling of talking face to face once again made my heart race against my chest.

Willi bit down on his lips fishing his hands into his pant pockets he looked back at Zachary.

“I don’t really think that he will need any reason not to meet you tomorrow when he found you after a long time,” I heard him whisper.

“What?” I asked even though I heard everything clearly.

“I know you heard me,” and that annoying smile of his was back on his lips. It was the Willi I knew. He would smile without any reason.

“Bu-”

He cut me off and pulled Zachary’s arm over his shoulder and made him stand on his feet.

“Well, time to leave! See you so- tomorrow,” he laughed and as took a step with Zachary leaning against him now asleep, my shawl slipped off my body as I watched both of them leaving the house from the same way they came in with my shawl still in Zachary’s hand.

“Coffee?” Kiara asked as I combed my hair furiously tying it up into a ponytail.

“No!”

“Tea?” She asked leaning against the open door frame of my bedroom.

“No!”

“Water?”

“No!”

“Juice?”

“No!”

“Mr. Sullivan?” she asked which made me glance at her through the mirror.

“Never!” I muttered more to myself but my traitor heart yelled against the word that I used.

“Oh really?” she mocked me wiggling her eyebrows.

“Stop it, Kiara!” I glared at her and straightened the collar of my blue and black checkered shirt.

Thanks to Willi I couldn’t sleep the whole night thinking that I would be meeting Zachary once again in the morning. I made up my mind that before he could come and stand on my doorstep I would vanish out from his sight. And for that, I called Tess in the morning asking her if she and the other girls would like to go out on a road trip. She said yes immediately thanks to my stars. I guess the stars are really on my side today.

“We will leave without eating anything?” Kiara made an astonished face to which I just shrugged in reply.

“We shall eat something in our way,” I said as I applied some pink lip gloss on my lips.

“Bu-”

“Let’s go!” I looked at the time to find it already half past nine in the morning. I have no idea about the time when Zachary would show up so, getting out of the house as soon as possible is the only choice left. I took hold of Kiara’s hand and dragged her towards the front door picking up my purse in the process.

“Why are we even going on a road trip all of a sudden? You even forced me to take the day off from my work!” she complained and all I did was to ignore her rants.

“Well I kind of know why you are doing this,” I heard her while I locked the door.

“He is coming today, right? Are you going to run away from him? Fine, you will just ignore him today but what about tomorrow? You can’t just always go on a trip or force me to take the day off you know!” she spoke continuously as we walked towards our neighbor’s house. On reaching there I saw Tess already out with her car while Marianna stood there talking on her phone whilst Eve was locking her house door.

“Oh Good morning!” Marianna said as she looked at our way putting an end to her call she fished it inside her pant pockets.

“Morning!” Eve yelled as she jogged to us.

“Good morning,” I smiled at them and looked back at Tess who came out of her car and walked to us.

“So ready for the trip?” she beamed with joy.

“You look more excited from the one who suggested the idea of the road trip,” Marianna chuckled at Tess’s cheerfulness.

“I know right!” Eve joined us smiling at Tess.

“Well, I was also planning a road trip. I just love road trips. Who doesn’t?” she beamed. I felt the warm aura radiating off her and seeing her cheerful smile made me feel little better.

“Well off we go then,” Marianna said raising her hand and we joined as we walked towards the black Suv.

“Oh wow, I didn’t know that you own a Honda CR-V Tess!” I said admiring the car.

“Gift from my dad,” she beamed as she hopped in the driver seat and I sat next to her in the passenger seat while Marianna, Eve and Kiara took the back seat.

“Ready?” Tess asked excitedly.

I gave her a smirk while the three of them yelled at the top of their lungs “Ready,” excited.

“Oh C’mon! it’s only ten in the morning! Let me sleep!” we heard a guy from the neighbor and I looked back at them giving them an amused look.

“Rise and shine sleepyhead!” all of us yelled at the top of our lungs before Tess ignited the engine and we drove off. Halfway through the way, we continued laughing and chatting about that sleepy guy. I was so indulged in the conversation that I completely forgot about Zachary and failed to notice a black sedan which was following our car all the while.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 53

A gust of wind went past me hitting my face in the process. A small smile appeared on my lips as I turned a little to look behind to find my girls taking pictures on the roadside. Marianna decided to take a little break since Tess has been riding continuously for hours. We saw a meadow and that was when we thought about parking the car on the roadside and to enjoy the scenery for a little while. After taking the pictures, I decided to walk crossing the road to the other side where I stood under a tree looking at the vast ocean of sunflowers. As far as my eyes could see, the only thing I could see was the bobbing head of the sunflowers.

"Guys look there!" I could hear Eve shouting from across the road towards my direction.

"Oh wow!"

"C'mon let's go there!"

Without a warning four of them ran past me into the field not even caring about any snake or insects which could cause them harm. They went directly into the middle and soon enough began to take pictures.

"Hey Juliette," I heard Kiara calling me and I looked up at her direction where she stood next to Eve and Marianna waving at me to join them.

I smiled and nodded my head no politely declining the offer. My declination caused her to slump her shoulders in defeat and she turned back to Tess clicking pictures of her with the sunflowers.

As I stood there silently laughing and chuckling at my friends who were busy clicking pictures and making funny poses my mind couldn't help but recall the moment when Zachary encircled me in his arms and caught me off guard by taking a selfie with me as he called it 'making memories'.

I still remember the day, he made my heart pound rapidly. I knew that I was in love once again cause a mere touch by him made me feel those things which I never really felt when I was with Emmett. But again, it was the same day where everything ended. I understood that whatever I was feeling towards him was one sided. It was hard to know that the man I loved would never reciprocate how I feel towards him.

A sigh escaped my mouth as sadness marred my cheerful mood and I rubbed my face using my palms.

It is not really necessary to get love from the one whom you love the most. I guess I have a rotten luck after all. When it comes to love, I always fail.

“Juliette!” I was broke out of my state when I saw Tess standing before me with a frown on her face.

“What?” I asked slowly and raised my eyebrows in confusion when she pointed towards my back with her eyes.

“What?” I whispered confused and then turned to look at what she was pointing. My eyes widen in shock for a minute but as quickly as I could I turned back around hiding my expression from the one who was standing across the road with a cigarette in between his finger, leaning against our car. There stood the man about whom I have been reminiscing a few minutes ago wearing a black polo shirt and black jeans with brown shoes.

“What is he-” I couldn’t help but feel my cheeks burn and I could clearly hear the pumping of my heartbeat.

“He has been standing there and has been looking at you all this while. Who is he? I think I have seen him somewhere! Where?” she questioned herself putting her hand under her chin while I stood there fidgetting with my finger thinking what to do.

Why does he always show up out of nowhere?

“How long has he been there?” I asked more like whispered to Tess.

“Um may be from two minutes. He stopped the car and walked up to our car and has been standing there watching you all the while. Who is he anywa-”

My nostrils flared up inhaling the familiar cologne of the man and immediately I realized that he has moved behind me and was now standing few inches away from me. He was close, close enough that I could feel the warmth of his body engulfing me.

“Sorry to interrupt. Can I borrow her for some minutes?” his masculine husky tone filled my ears as he stood behind me and asked directly to Tess completely ignoring my presence.

“Eh?” Tess gave him a puzzled look and turned to look at me.

“Why not!” I heard an annoying chirpy voice which belonged to Kiara.

“But Ki-” Tess was cut off by Kiara “It’s okay they know each other,” she said and even though I wanted to glare and yell at Kiara, I couldn’t. He was too close.

“Thank you,” I heard his voice and by the tone, I assumed that he smiled at them because soon enough I found Eve and Tess swooning over him.

Like a gust of wind, I felt the absence of his presence and guessed that he might have left not even bothering to ask me if I wanted to come or not. I looked at Kiara and she gave me a toothy grin. A faint smile appeared on my lips as I decided to join him and making up my mind that I would only listen whatever he has to say. Why all of a sudden he decided to show up in my life and why does he want to talk to me.

“I’ll be back,” I said and turned slowly to find him walking towards his sedan.

Ironically, the sedan looked familiar and an image of a same colored sedan following our car a few minutes ago struck my mind.

“This man!” I muttered to myself as I realized that he followed me.

Exhaling a breath, I took a step forward but stopped when Kiara opened her mouth to talk.

“Amend things instead of breaking them,” she whispered so that I could be the only one who could hear that.

Glancing at her from my sideways, I gave her a small smile and followed Zachary to his sedan. He was already seated on the driver seat while I took my time to reach the vehicle and take my place next to him. All the while feeling the blood rush on my skin and I tried to hide it turning in my seat to put my seat belts on.

“Where are we going?” I asked fidgeting with the hem of my shirt.

Like a plague he ignored me and I turned to look at him to find his jaw clenched and he had a determined look on his face, as he ignited the engine and the car sped up onto the road.

Where is he taking me?

“Zac-”

“Let me drive,” was his reply. His answer immediately made me shut up my mouth.

Is it because he doesn’t want to get disturbed when he is driving or am I simply annoying to him?

Whatever it was I chose to keep my mouth shut and waited until we reach the place wherever he was taking me.

Amidst all this, I couldn’t help but keep on playing with my finger. It was possibly because of the suspense he was creating by not talking to me and letting me know where he was taking me.

Was I afraid?

Yes, I was.

Why?

Will he hurt me?

No, he won’t.

Then?

I was afraid because I feared I would let my emotions out and end up throwing my heart before him only to be crushed down again. I was afraid because there was this nagging in my mind that he will not understand. He would and won't ever understand how I feel for him. What if he does?

I shook my head and put my fist into my mouth as I looked out of the window. It's been fifteen minutes since we have been traveling and finally, the car stopped with a screech and the sudden push on the brake caught me off-guard as I bent forward due to the impact but thanks to the seatbelt and me putting my hand on the dashboard on time to protect myself.

"Wha-?"

"Get out!" was the only thing he said before he got out of the car and I looked at his back astonished by his demeanor.

"Zachary wait!" I called before him as I unfasten my belt and got out of the car and I recognized the place as Merri Creek trail. It was where I came with my girls.

"Zachary wait!" I called him and followed him as he walked towards the Merri Creek bridge.

The place was mostly known for its cyclist and pedestrian path. I remember coming here with my girls because Tess's family lives here nearby and as we were also invited to her house we got the chance to enjoy the surroundings too.

In the middle of the bridge, he stopped and I watched as he raked his hair looking anything but calm. Meanwhile, I huffed out air as I put my hands on my knee feeling exhausted for running after him.

"How do you feel?" he asked all of a sudden.

I looked up and stood straight looking at his back confused thinking what he meant.

"Answer me!" he said suddenly raising his voice as he turned around and faced me.

"Zachary I-"

"Sssh!" I was cut off all of a sudden when he took a long step towards me and kept a finger on my lips.

"It's frustrating, right? when you call someone and they don't turn up when you need them the most hmm?" all of a sudden he withdraws his hand and taking a step backward he rubs his face.

"Zachary I don't unders-"

"You understand everything!" he yelled at me making me gasp.

"Do you hear me? You.." he lunges at me and pulling me by my arms he shook me on my place "understand everything!"

“Don’t play with me, Juliette! I know...” suddenly his palms are cupping my cheeks as he pulls me to him gazing straight into my eyes “you understand everything.”

“What were you doing?” he asked as he leaves my face and I take back still not getting anything.

“I dont understa-”

“Ah! Zac-c” I was pulled roughly to him as he held my face by my hair with my body pressed against him.

“Hurts?” he hissed on my face grabbing my chin using his other free hand.

“I bet this isn’t even a little percent of what I have been feeling since the day I have met you!” he spat and though he pulled my hair tightly his words were more painful for me to take in. Streaks of tear fell down my cheeks as I took in what he just said.

“So you regret ever meeting me?” I whispered loud enough for him to hear.

As soon as his eyes fell on my tears his grip loosened and he hugged me putting my head on his chest.

“That is the thing! It is the regret that I don’t feel. I thought I should feel the regret for ever meeting you but that is the thing, I don’t feel any which is why I’m confused and now I am broken,” he whispered the last part but as I heard it I looked up at him placing my palm on his chest.

“I thought I would eventually forget you and I would eventually move on in my life but it seems my heart doesn’t wish the same as I do. No matter what it keeps yearning for you,” he pressed his forehead against mine as he spoke “I have recognized the feeling and that is what is hurting me right now,”

“You don’t feel the same and it makes me feel lonely to know that I am the only one who fell in love!” he said but as he said that the world began to spin before my eyes.

“Juliette?” I heard his worried voice as I held my head and felt my knees giving out but it was only because for his arms still around my waist I didn’t end up on the ground.

“Juliette?” I felt his palm on my cheek and I opened my eyes looking straight into his eyes.

“Is it that shocking to you that you almost fainted?” he chuckled darkly as his eyes scanned my face.

“N-No I-”

“Why did you run?” he asked his face contouring with anger as he looked at me sharply, his accusing eyes penetrating my soul.

“I came to you last night right! So tell me why did you run? Are you this desperate to stay away from me that you ran the morning hoping that you would not have to face me?”

“Guess what?” he chuckled and trailed a finger on my neck. His touch sending shiver down my spine. He had no idea what effect he had on me!

“I found you!” he leaned closer to my ear, his hot breath fanning the sides of cheek “and this time you can’t escape!” he whispered as he brushed his lips against my earlobes.

I didn’t quite really understand what made by heart beat rise all of a sudden, his words or his cold hand touching the bare skin on my waist. Voluntarily, I looked down to find both of his hands inside my shirt holding me by the waist while his thumbs caressed my skin making me feel hot.

“It’s your fault after all!” he chuckled probably noticing the blush creeping on my face. The next thing I felt was his head on my shoulder and his hot breath fanning the nudge of my neck.

“You were the reason why I fell into all these emotions. I thought I would forget you and move on but again it was your fault. You shouldn’t have come before my eyes once again. You lit that fire within me by ignoring me last night. You thought you escape?” he placed his hand on the other side of my shoulder and I clutched my thigh tightly as I felt him placing a wet kiss on my neck making me gasp.

“You can run as much as you want now because I have finally found my goal. You have lit up that burning desire of having you all by myself and to take pleasure until tired. Your body has become my life and your soul is my love. You can’t stop me now sweetheart,” he bit down on my earlobe “for I have returned,”

He stood straight in his place and held me by the back of my neck and pulled me to him “Returned to take what rightfully belongs to me,” he stopped just inches away from my lips.

“You made a mistake! You provoked me to run after you. You shouldn’t have ignored me last night!” he smiled darkly as he left my face and took steps backward.

“You wanted to run? Then run!” he said clearly enunciating each word.

“Run as fast as you can. Run as long as you can. But make sure that you don’t stop!” all of a sudden he leaped forward pulling my hair from my ponytail, but not painfully making me glance straight up into his eyes.

“Because if you do,” he chuckled as I watched his eyes turned darker and darker but out of lust?

“I’ll be right behind you to take you,” he leaned closer and pressed his cheek to mine.

Ta-Take me?

“Then you can’t ever escape. You will end up having regrets for ever stopping. After all, it was all your fault” he laughed and took few steps back eyeing me hungrily “You burned the desire in me to chase.”

~

“Hello?”

“Ola?”

“Yo! Yo!” I broke out of my state when I saw Kiara moving her hands before my eyes.

“Will you tell me what happened?” she asked as I sat properly on my seat and looked out of the running car. The sun had already set down and we were heading right back to our home. After that conversation with Zachary, I was too shocked to even move. He dragged me back to his car and drove us back where had picked me up. Our moods were reversed by the time we reached back. He looked lighter, happier and generous while me, on the other hand, shocked, confused and flustered.

This is how it feels when a man truly loves a woman?

And is this really how it feels to know that you are the woman who he loves?

“I will take you,”

“Because believe me, I never had this desire to love someone before. And now when I had it, I think it will be difficult for you to escape.”

“So give in to me.”

His words kept rotating before my eyes and I felt my cheeks burning. His words have also set me on fire. Lifting up my leg on the seat, I put my head on my knees wanting to hide my face from Kiara but all the while a silly smile remained plastered on my face.

He fell in love with me. With me.

His confession has given me a reason to smile once again. He had freed me from the pain I have been feeling all these months. If I had known it earlier then I would not have ignored him last night. It wasn’t my intention. But I was in pain and I was broken. I needed him and all of a sudden he appeared before me which made me flee.

Had only I have kno-

“Wait!” I said out loud as I rose my head up when the reality dawned on me.

“What about Loana?” I thought as I balled my fist and looked out of the window all of a sudden anger burning inside me as I remembered her and what she did.

“I m telling you I have seen him somewhere before,” Tess punched the steering wheel as she drove us back to our home.

“Oh just shut up!” was what Marianna replied in annoyance.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 54

Juliette Pov

“I swear I’ll just slam my head against the damn wall until I die or I’ll just get inside this fucking phone and kill the damn fucking man on the other end by strangling his neck with the damn ear cords or the phone charger!” Kiara yelled at the top of her voice as she paced around my room holding her still ringing phone in her hand.

The anonymous is still after Kiara.

“Oh C’mon! You just keep on ignoring him. What if he is your prince charming? Why don’t you go and meet him?” I said as I filed my nails using the filer.

“Prince charming my ass!” she cursed as she clawed the backside of the phone cover and took the battery out.

“Damn!” I chuckled at her behavior.

“Shut up!” she groaned when she heard ringing voice from her pants pocket. She had two phones and she groaned seeing the number in her ID.

“I can’t believe this! How come he has all of my phone numbers?” she growled and pulling her hair she walked out of my room.

I chuckled at her and kept the filer on the nightstand as I slid and made myself comfortable on my bed. Looking at the clock it read half past ten in the night. As I pulled the quilt over myself a deep blush formed on my cheeks as I remembered the events that took place in the morning.

“Zachary,” I mumbled to myself as my mind drifted back to the day when we first met.

What a day it was.

I got up from my sleeping position and sat on the bed untying my hair as I smiled to myself. Hugging my knees, I kept my head on my hand as I gazed out of the window.

“This is so unrealistic,” I smiled as I thought about him.

“He didn’t even let me speak else I would’ve...” I stopped in the middle as I bit down on my lips.

Would I have let him know how I feel about him?

of course!

Laying back on the bed on my side I closed my eyes for a second and snuggled into my pillow when I heard faint noises until I drifted off to sleep.

I felt something cold on my cheek, I groaned and tried to pry it away as I rolled on my side to the other side of the bed. Seconds later something again touched my bare arm and I searched for it sleepily and as I got hold of it, I furrowed feeling it as a hand.

“What?” I mumbled and tried to open my eyes. Everything was blurry to my eyes. It took some seconds for my eyes to adjust to the surrounding but as soon as the blur diminished my eyes came in contact with those brown orbs of the person whom I have been dreaming and have been longing for from the day I have left him. To my absolute horror as soon as I realized the person to be Zachary sitting next to me on my bed and staring down at me, I jolted up from my sleeping position hitting my head against the headboard in the process.

“Careful!” he hissed and forwarded his hand to hold my face but rubbing my now throbbing head I backed away as far as I could from him.

“Juliette?” he questioned lowering his head to the side questioning my behavior.

But he was so close....

“Ow!” I winced and gave him an awkward smile as I rubbed my head and looked around frantically thinking where were we.

It seemed the same room where I remembered drifting off to sleep last night.

Same room.

My room.

“Zachary... um, what are you doing here?” I asked once I regained my sanity.

“Where is your phone?” he asked shifting in his position turning towards me.

“Phone?” I questioned him back.

He raised an eyebrow and stared at me with his piercing brown eyes.

“Oh, phone?” I laughed awkwardly and looked around under the pillow and on the nightstand nervously.

Why am I so nervous?

“There,” I muttered as I lifted it up from the ground. It looked like it fell from the bed when I jolted up from the sleep seeing his face.

“Here is my phone!” I showed it to him and he signaled using his eyes to look at it.

Sliding the screen, I unlocked my phone to find nine missed calls and the name read ‘My Heartbeat.’

“Nine missed calls,” I muttered and raised my eyes to look at him.

“I was asleep,” I said and mustering up courage tried to act as if what the big deal if I didn’t pick his call.

“I know that!” he said and racked his hand on his hair. My eyes followed his movement and I appreciated what I saw. He was still in the same clothes that he wore in the morning. A blush formed on my cheek as I saw his arm muscles flexing when his racked his hair.

Oh damn!

“S-So?” I managed to ask.

He looked back at me and roamed his eyes on me. I shifted in my position pulling the straps of my tank tops up all of a sudden feeling self-conscious.

“Pack your things!” he said all of a sudden as his eyes remained constant on my neck.

“What?” I asked as I realized what he just said.

“I don’t like to repeat myself!” he said and got up from his place walking towards the window he looked outside shoving his hands into his pants pockets.

“What?” was all that formed in my mouth.

“It seems as if you like that word,” I heard him chuckle and I got up from my place.

“What do you mean by pack your things?” I asked walking up to him but then I realized “Oh wait! How come you are here? At this time of the da-night?” I looked back at the clock to read past three o’clock in the morning.

“How did you get in?” I asked scratching the side of my arm in utter tension.

“You have good friends,” was all he said.

Kiara?

How dare she?

Traitor.

“Oh, I’m going to kill her today!” I said and turned ready to kill her but stopped when he opened his mouth.

“You can do that later. Go and pack your things,” he said and I balled my fists in anger.

“Why?” I demanded.

“You are coming with me,” he said with his back facing me.

How dare he command me?

I am not his pet dog!

“Where and why? What’s the urgency?” I questioned folding my arms across my chest.

I waited for him to answer me but all I got in return was silence. Still, I waited. I waited for him to reply. He can’t just barge into my life and order me around. I need to know what’s the urgency that he had to barge inside my room in the middle of the night and all of a sudden as-no command me to pack my things.

Who does he think he is?

And as long as I remember, I have already signed on those divorce papers that he sent me through dad. We are no longer married. He can’t just command me to do whatever he wants.

“Don’t question me, Juliette,” he said almost in a tone which had the hint of anger in it.

“I will! You cant expect me not to question you when you barge into a stranger’s room in the middle of the nigh-”

“Stranger?” he turned around raising an eyebrow his face contorted with anger.

“Of course!” I shifted in my position all of a sudden feeling nervous because of his enraged demeanor.

“If you have forgotten then let me remind you. We are no longer bound to each other and we are no longer married to each other. We are divorce-”

“Oh let me burst that bubble! I haven’t signed in those divorce papers yet!” he took an intimidating step towards me which made me take a step back involuntarily.

“What? But you were the one who sent it to me,” I said remembering the day when dad came into my room holding the divorce papers in hand looking as if he had won millions in a lottery.

“Your dad sent me your signed papers telling me that you have willingly signed it and want me to sign it,” he hissed out and glared at me.

“But he sai- you have-,” realization hit me and I understood that dad has tricked us.

“Dad,” I mumbled thinking why did I not contact Zachary back then? I could have asked him about it by myself instead I signed it. That reminds me why did I sign it as soon as dad said he has sent me those papers?

Loana Ularu...

“Of course! I signed it because I thought he had sent me the paper because he wanted to free himself from me and get back to her. Did he not love her then?” I mumbled to myself.

“What did you just say?” I looked up when I found him looking down at me with furrowed eyebrows.

“Nothing,” I said and shook my head before glaring back at him.

But still, it doesn't give him the right to order me like that.

"What are you waiting for?" he asked as he turned around towards the window. His muscles tensed as he shoved his hands back into his pants pockets and stood there probably waiting for me to do as he had asked me to do.

As if...

"I asked you a question. How can you barge into a st-" he turned around swiftly and got hold of my arm as he pulled me to him "Last time I checked we are still married and you name it stranger?" he mocked me and pushed me back freeing my hand.

"Then let me make it clear to you. I am here to take you back with me-" he silenced me by keeping his finger on my lips not even letting me interrupt his speech "and you are coming with me whether you like it or not!" he finished but that enraged me.

How dare he?

"Who do you think you ar-" I screamed at the top of my voice as he lifted me up on his shoulder and I dangled on his shoulder on my belly feeling the air exhaling out in one go from my lungs.

"Put me down!" I screamed banging on his shoulder.

"I am fed up with you and your tantrums. I had given you enough time but you wasted it all. This is all happening because of you," I heard him as I yelled and scratched on his back.

"Kiara! Kiara!" I yelled and tried to look towards her room while Zachary walked past her room towards the living room.

I thanked the lords when she came out of her room yawning like a fool. I expected her to run and help me but as her eyes fell on me she yawned once again and mumbled "I am still sleeping," before walking back into her room and closing the door.

"Kiara you fool!" I screamed.

"Ugh, Zachary put me down. I am warning you!" clutching his shirt I warned him seriously but all he did was to huff and soon to my relief I felt him putting me down in my living room.

"You jer-" he tied my stole that I had left previously on the couch in my mouth as I fought and tried to stop him.

"What are you doing?" came out my muffled sound as I punched him in his stomach but as soon as he was done with my mouth he got hold of my hand and folded it back and tied it using something restraining my movements.

"Perfect!" he smirked and was ready to put me back on his shoulder when I stomped on his foot and ran away from him. He hissed in pain but soon regain his posture and was soon behind me.

How many times will I let myself get kidnapped by him?

“Juliette,” came his enraged voice as he followed me back to my room. I was just going to close the door using my foot but then I remembered my hands were still bound and I can’t lock the damn door.

Oh my lord!

“So where now?” he asked as he stopped right behind me and I turned around frantically out of my breath.

He took intimidating steps towards me while I took mine backward all the while trying desperately to get the damn cloth away from my mouth and hand.

“What will you do now Juliette? Cause nobody can hear you,” he smirked and that made my eyes widen in shock.

What the...?

Okay! Now I am terrified.t

“What are thinking Juliette?” he asked as closed the gap between us but I hit my heel on the foot of the bed and I fell on my back with my hand still tied down but to make things more complicated Zachary tried to stop my fall but in the end lost his balance and fell right on top of me. Amidst of all this, the cloth which was restraining my hand movements loosened and I freed my hand successfully. But then...

Should I be angry that he forced me to come with him or on the fact that he was on top me stopping me from moving just by gazing down at me, doing nothing.

My breath hitched when I looked at his eyes. It held admiration and what I felt like love for me. His gaze was intense and I didn’t realize when his hand moved up and pulled the stole down from my mouth.

I knew that it was the day which would never return. It was the day which I would later curse or smile on. I could have stopped him or let him because it was completely on me when I watched as he lowered his head down. His eyes fixated on my lips. I could have stopped it from letting happen. I could have pushed him away but his Irresistible invitations were just too much for me to handle. I was already in love with love all I needed was just to let him know how I felt because it was his right to know after he had confessed his feelings to me.

I wanted to confess it to him before letting it happen.

No, I wasn’t scared. I wanted him. I was being selfish and greedy for his love and for the want to make him mine.

So, I let him do whatever he wanted.

I didn’t stop him but I knew I could have.

I let him kiss me.

Xxxx

Chapter 55

Juliette Pov

What are you doing?

Let me go!

Who are you?

Emmett!

Mom! Dad!

Jace.... Help me!

Please...

Somebody, please help me...

Zachary Udolf Sullivan.

Why did you save me today?

Zachary get me out of here, please! I can't breathe

I will never trust you. You killed my Emmett. You are a murderer.

Z-Zachary he betrayed me.

I hate you Em- oh sorry Nicholas.

I can't keep this necklace, Zachary. It belongs to your family and I do not belong to your family.

Zachary! You douche!

What? You all knew about Emmett being Nicholas from the beginning?

Dad, how could you?

I am stuck in a marriage deal.

Zachary is not the villain. Nicholas is...

Zachary you monkey! I'll kill you.

How do I look?

Loana and Zachary?

Zachary is my husband.

Zachary loves you? Loana Ularu...

But Zachary she started it all...

He doesn't believe me.

Oh my god! I am going to die today...

Vito? Nicholas?

Save me...

Please...

Zachary?

I think I'm in love with him.

But he doesn't love me.

Dad let's get back home.

Kiara! I can't forget him.

I am sorry Kiara. I've caused you a lot of pain. I'll try to move on.

Z-Zachary?

You left me.

I have fallen for you.

I am here to take you back whether you like it or not.

Juliette...

Everything replayed in my mind. From the day I met him to the very present moment everything replayed in my mind. I felt my body heating up as I felt his wet lips on mine. Placing my hand on his chest, I knew I have two options and it was I could stop him and push him away else I could let him do whatever he wants.

But that's not correct.

He should know what I felt for him.

Sure, he told me that he doesn't care what I feel for him but still he should know.

But then, I need to know about him and Loana.

Am I the person who came in the middle of their relationship?

I felt him touch the side of my face as he got on top of me properly and moved his lips softly. I stayed still.

Not because I didn't want to kiss him but my body wasn't listening to me. I felt his finger on the side of my neck as he kissed me passionately. Slowly and steadily.

His lips molding against mine as he fastens his pace and soon enough my body arched up to his touch as I felt the shiver and tingles running all over my body. No wonder, my face heat up and I could literally feel the blood rush to my cheeks. Mustering up courage, I let myself to be kissed by the man whom I loved and slowly I tried to follow him. I opened my mouth for a bit but then he left me.

As I looked into his eyes, he looked into mine as if he was trying to search for something. His eyes roamed over my face and then end on my swollen lips as I opened my mouth to exhale and inhale. His breath fanned on my face and soon enough I felt his cold finger on my eyebrow, as he trailed his finger on the scar that I had got because of a guy who accidentally threw his baseball bat in my direction.

"Juliette," he whispered. My name rolling out from his tongue made me want him more. I was hot to my core and damn the man didn't have any idea how I felt.

"What about Loana?" I heard myself.

"What?" he asked with furrowed eyebrows but then I realised what I just did.

Damn!

"Miss Ularu?" he questioned as he lifted his body up and sat next to mine on the bed looking down at me with a confused state.

Should I ask him?

Well, the words have already left my mouth.

"Yes, Loana Ularu," I said as I used my elbows to lift myself up and I sat next to him pushing the loose strands of my hair behind my ear.

"What about her?" he asked slowly.

"Aren't you both...um together?" I asked and fidgeted with my fingers.

I waited for him to reply but after two to three seconds when he didn't open his mouth I turned to looked at him to find him already looking at me.

"What?"I asked slowly confused by his state.

"Pardon?" he said and I inhaled deeply before asking once again "Aren't you both toget-"

"Who do you think I am?" he snarled all of a sudden making me gasp. He glared at me and hastily got down of the bed rubbing his face.

“But I...” he turned around swiftly and bent down putting both of his hands on my either side looking straight into my eyes. His action made me bent backward a little but then his behavior confused me even further.

“Why have been so stuck up with her?”

“What is your problem with her?”

“You even fought with her the last time-” I cut him in the middle ” I? You are saying that I fought with her? How judgemental of you Zachary! Do you even know what she told me that day? She was the one who provoked me” I argued glaring back at him emphasizing my words letting him know that I was telling the truth.

“And you! You even raised your hand on me that day!” I felt the sides of my eyes stinging as I remembered the day.

“Juliette I-” he withdrew his hands from my side as he took few steps backward.

“Forgive me for that!” he said apologetically as I hugged myself and turned my head to the side.

“But you were so wild. You weren’t behaving like a normal person and you were out of control,” he said raising his tone and I snapped my head towards him.

“What? ME? Wild?” I questioned pointing a finger towards myself.

“Oh really? what exactly do you know that you think I was the one who behaved wildly?” I sneered and took an intimidating step towards him in anger which caused him to take a step backward.

“Whatever it was but I’m sure that it wasn’t that big enough for you to use ur claws at her,” he remarked and that hiked my anger even more.

“Oh yes! Of course! I am so stupid!” I laughed hysterically rubbing my forehead.

“Of course you will take her side. You will trust her blindly without even knowing what happened that day,” I said and he gasped out air. His mouth forming an ‘O’ to speak but no words came out.

“What are you saying? Juliette...” he touched my arm and said as calmly as he could.

“Where are you taking all this to?” he asked and I jerked his hands away as I snapped at him.

“You think I am exaggerating all this without any reason? She said you slept with her and you love her!” I pushed on his chest as I felt my eyes getting watery.

“What?” he said almost astonished with what I just blurted out.

“Yes! She said I was in the middle of you two. You love her and she loves you. She even showed me the love bites on her chest which enraged me that day. But still, I expected you to hear me out but what did you do? You raised your hand on me. Before her. You proved her correct and

you made a fool of me before everyone," tears spill down my eyes as I covered my face using my palm.

"What?" was all he said.

"What?" I repeated after him and wiped my tears away as I looked back at him.

"I am a fool. I should've known that I was the one wh-" he cut me off in the middle "So, this was the reason why you decided to leave?" he asked and I looked up at him.

"You thought I love her?" he asked once again as I pursed my lips and rubbed my palms on my pants.

"Do you even remember what I told you today in the morning?" he questioned taking a step closer to me.

"I fell for you," he repeated his words and I felt my heart beat fastening.

"I said I fell for you" he repeated once again.

"You!" he snapped all of a sudden pointing his finger towards me which made me yelp in my place in shock.

"If I were to be in love with her then I wouldn't have fallen for you dammit!" he growled and punched his left hand on the wall in anger.

"Zachary!" I leaned forward to take his hand that he punched but he stopped me showing me his hand to stop.

"You let another woman come in between us? You decided to leave just like that! Do you have any idea how I have been after you left?" he complained and his marred with sadness.

"But Zachary I had to leave anyhow because of the dea-"

"Don't tell me about those stupid things. You and I both know that we weren't bounded by that stupid deal. It was just for your protection nothing else. And Miss Ularu, I took her side only because I respect her father who is my former business partner. I thought you two just had a misunderstanding and I tried to stop you two but you were lunging at her as if you were ready to kill her. I thought if you harmed her then I would have a bad impression on her father who was once my teacher but never really thought that it could have been this serious. Fine! I agree what I did was not correct, a mistake. I shouldn't have raised my hand on you, hell I still curse myself for that but you. You shattered my heart into pieces" he said and all of a sudden the anger that I felt subsided with a feeling of worries.

"You could have asked me hell you could have confronted me. You were married to me and even though we didn't share the same feeling still I couldn't cheat on you. I expected you to ask me if it was related to our life. Every time I asked you that you can ask me anything you thought

I was always asking you about that Nicholas. All you ever think is Nicholas! Nicholas! and Nicholas!" he sneered and his face contorted with anger scared me.

"How many times did I ask you not leave?" he took a menacing step towards me.

"Hu? Tell me! How many times did I ask you not leave?" he asked and I remembered the day when I was packing my stuff to come back home with my father. He did try to stop me. Not directly but indirectly.

"Answer me!" he snapped catching me off guard.

"Zachary I..." no words formed on my mouth as the burden of guilt felt on my shoulders.

"Did it ever fell before you that maybe Ularu was lying to you? You idiot.. You fight with me for every single little thing but you couldn't confront me about her. Hell, you could have asked me directly if I liked her. Did you really never notice how I felt for you? I have been in love since the time I had met you and every time you ignored my feelings. Have you ever felt or even realised why I cared for you?" he asked and the air in my lungs exhaled out as the words sink in.

"Zachar-"

"Once again! You showed me that you feel nothing for me. I am the only stupid one who has always longed for you. And I believe that I will always remain the only one," he said the last part slowly but I heard it. Before I could say anything he turned around and walked out of the room.

"Zachary! Wait!" I ran after him out of the room.

"Zachary please listen to me!" I begged running after him but as I was about to touch his arm he turned around and snarled on my face showing me a warning finger "Don't touch me" his voice laced with poison which hurt me.

"Za-" he didn't even let me finish because he opened the door and walked out slamming the door shut after him.

"Zachary," tears fell down my eyes as I stood there feeling hurt because I was the reason of pain for the person whom I loved.

"I told you!"

"I fucking told you that don't believe her. She is a cheap woman and I knew that type of woman would go to any extent to break healthy relationships," Kiara yelled at the top of her lungs pointing an accusing finger at me while I sobbed wiping the tear away using a tissue.

"I have hurt him badly Kiara," I sobbed and hiccupped.

"All this while I thought he was the one who hurt me but every time ... every freaking time he proved me wrong. He has always saved me and he has always loved me damn it. I am so stupid. All this while I have been the one who had hurt him and now he is so much in pain...oh my

god! What am I going to do now Kiara? Tell me! Please tell me!" holding her arm I pulled her towards me but she jerked her arm away from me.

"Sit and cry and watch as that bitch takes your prince away from you!" Kiara said sarcastically but that made me cry even harder.

"Oh Kiara," I sobbed.

"Please stop now," she threw her hands in the air as she took the seat before me on the sofa.

"Why are you so heartless? You are being mean to me!" I wept as she rolled her eyes at me.

"You deserve this actually!" she remarked and I hide my face using the tissue sobbing hard.

"Okay fine! I am sorry" she exhaled out air and inhaled deeply before speaking "So what now? Did you tell him that you love him too?" she asked and all I did was nod my head no.

"Of course!" she groaned and threw her head back as she rubbed her head using her long slender finger.

"What will I do now? He is not even picking my calls. I am gonna lose him once aga-"

"Oh shut up!" she snapped at me which made me lift my legs up as I sat hugging and burying my head on my hand.

"He is not picking your calls. Did you try to send him a text message?" she asked and I hummed in response.

"So he didn't reply. Okay!" I watched as she got up from her seat and she walked towards the glass sliding door.

"When I opened the door for him yesterday night, he looked so happy. You ruined everything dammit!" I heard her mutter which made me sob even more.

"Okay! Okay! Now stop! I didn't mean that!" she made up an excuse and stood there thinking something.

"That guy!" all of a sudden her face lit up and her eyes widened up as if she realised something.

"What is his name again?" she questioned.

"Who?" I questioned with my throaty voice.

"That guy! That guy who came with him that night in that club, your bodyguard!" she said and I realised what she meant.

"Willi?" I asked and she nodded clapping her hand.

"Yes! Yes! Willi... Call him and please don't tell me that you don't have his number," she said and I reached for my phone.

“No, I don’t have his number,” I said as I opened my contact list and heard her groaning “but I have Max’s number,” I said as I showed her Max’s number and watched as her saddened face lit up once again.

We called Max who was still back in Romania and asked him for Willi’s number. He even argued and yelled at me asking me to return back. I’m sure Zachary would have killed him for his behavior but I didn’t really care because I felt how much he worried about Zachary. I asked him to forgive me and finally got Willi’s number after listening to his half an hour of lecture. Then it was Willi’s turn of lecturing me. Every sentence he said had the word ‘Heartless’ which was only directed towards me.

He even said that if it wasn’t for Zachary he would have gifted me a piece of hearing that night when he came to take Zachary back with him. I had to apologize to him too and then after another half an hour of a lecture he told me the address of Zachary’s penthouse and told me that he would be attending a business party in two hours.

“Everyone is just making me feel as if I am the villain here,” I told Kiara after Willi the lecturer hung up on me after warning me not to break Zachary’s heart once again.

“Huh!” Kiara scoffed at me before walking away.

“Wow,” I muttered.

“Are you out of your mind?” Kiara snapped at me as she pulled my dress.

“Take this dress of right now I am telling you!” she pulled me by my arms.

“No! What’s wrong with this dress?” I asked as I looked at my green colored sheath dress. The dress had a plunging neckline and the dress had waist cut-outs which revealed my skin on the side my waist.

“Wear something red! You need to look hot and sexy and my dear RED is the definition of sexiness. Red means sexiness” she argued but I argued back “I want to wear this green one,”

“Zachary is correct! You are an idiot!” she exhaled and inhaled deeply.

“At least wear something black. You look good in black!” she said but I shook my head no and turned towards the mirror to look at myself.

Okay! The neckline is damn too plunging.

My hair was made into wavy curls and my makeup was minimum with eyeliner, mascara and light red lipstick.

“Why are you so obsessed with green today? You look like a tree!” she remarked as she sat on the bed.

Because it’s his favorite color...

“I just fell like wearing this today,” I said smiling at my reflection.

“Whatever your wish!” I heard her whisper which made me chuckle at her. As I looked at her through the mirror she huffed out air and gave up. She smiled back at me and whispered “All the best,”

As we walked towards the door I reminded her to thank Tess who had given me her car keys.

“Juliette!” I turned around when I heard Kiara calling me from my back.

“Make sure...” she yelled but stopped in the middle.

“Make sure?” I questioned furrowing my eyebrows at her.

“Make sure you don’t use a protection!” she yelled shamelessly. The passer-by looked at her and then at me giving us ‘that’ look.

“Kiara!” I snapped at her.

“What? Think about it! If you-” I put my hand on my ear feeling the blood rush on my cheek as I turned to leave but as soon as I freed my ear in order to open the car door she yelled “If you become pregnant then he will have to remain with you. You know! You got the power. Pull his leash-”

“My god Kiara!” I snapped at her showed her the middle finger which made her laugh in fits.

“Hysterical hyena!” I muttered but smiled at her childishness as I put the car in gear and sped up on the drive away.

“I am coming, Zachary. Wait for me. I’ll make it up to you” I smiled as I drove towards his direction.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 56

Juliette Pov

“You can’t go in ma’am,” the guard stopped me from going in as I stood outside the hall where Zachary was supposed to attend his business party.

“And why not?” I asked raising my eyebrow folding my arms across my body.

“You don’t have the invitation card!” another said and I rolled my eyes.

“My husband has it. Now let me through!” I said and tried to bypass them but one of them stopped me by holding me by my arm.

“How dare you?” I glared at him and jerked my arm away from him.

“We can’t let you pas-” the guard was cut off by someone behind me who spoke, “and why not?”

I turned around and was met face to face none other than Kristian who stood there with his eyes narrowed on the guard who just tried to stop me by my arm. He was in his blue business suit and his hair was styled slick back as he took long strides to reach us. His tone commanding and demanding and his soul piercing eyes penetrated the guard’s face as he glared at him.

“And what do you think you are doing, stopping the owner of the building?” he demanded but I gasped internally when he said the owner of the building.

“Let me introduce you to Mrs. Sullivan,” Kristian said and I watched as fear and shock marred their face when they realized who I was.

“And don’t expect me not to tell him about the stunt you just pulled,” Kristian said as he pulled his tie trying to loosen it and then looked back at me with a smile.

“W-we ’re sorry si-r, ma’am please forgive us,” came their trembled voice but Kristian didn’t even let me speak as he intervened “Shall we?” he asked and I nodded reluctantly. The guard hurried and opened the door open for us.

“I didn’t have any idea that Zachary owns this building,” I whispered once we entered toa hallway.

“Zachary owns many things that you can’t even imagine,” Kristian spoke looking at me sideways. His tone silent, void of any emotions.

Don’t tell me he is miffed with me too...

“Kristian!” I called him and he stopped right before me with his back facing me.

“I know you must be really upset with me but I-” I pursed my lips looking to my right blankly.

"It was the situation. I never really wanted to hurt your brother nor do I intend to hurt him any further" I said truthfully.

"I am here to make things work between Zachary and me. And I am really sorry for what that has been going thr-" he cut me off for the first time as he spoke: "You don't need to apologize to me. I hope things work between you two and I don't really blame you for everything. I know that both of you has suffered and I am no one to interfere but-" he turned around all of a sudden his eyes emotionless and with chin held high he spoke: "Don't hurt my brother ever. I know he loves you. I have seen his condition when you weren't there. I don't want to interfere but he is my only brother whom I respect the most in this world."

Gulping down the lump in my throat I nodded agreeing to him "I will not hurt him. Ever" I said the last part more to myself.

"That's good," he mumbled and again all of a sudden I watched as his behavior changed to that of his normal one. He smiled and his eyes began to sparkle.

"I guess he owns your heart too," I heard him mumble which made me smile a little.

"But don't think that I'll let him pass if he hurts your feelings too," he said and gave me a boyish grin which immediately made me take a sigh of relief.

Thank God he is back...

"Come to think of it, what are you doing here?" he asked as he straightened his suit.

"I am here for him of course," I said and looked behind him towards the door which was the main entrance to the hall.

"Oh yeah!" he said and nodded.

"Let's go then," he said and I nodded. He turned around and took a step further but stopped and again turned back to face me.

"You have come here alone?" he asked which made me raise an eyebrow.

"Eh?" I asked and he pulled his tie once again. He looked uncomfortable once again.

"I mean I thought your friend... um what's her name again?" he asked rubbing his neck.

"Kiara?" I asked and he nodded all of a sudden seeming interested to know about her.

"Yeah! Kiara it is! Wher-" once again he stopped in the middle and coughed a little time before continuing "Has she not accompanied you?" he asked looking straight into my eyes.

"No, she has work to do," I said and I watched as disappointment washed his face and that made me curious to know what's the matter.

“Why do you ask? Do you want to see her? You can always come to our hou-” again he intervened saying: ” No- No, I mean yeah why not?” he laughed nervously and turned around swiftly before heading towards the door.

“Interesting” I smirked seeing his reaction.

Is something going on between these two?

But Kiara would have already told me about it.

Hmmm....

I shrugged it off for the moment and adjusted my attire before walking towards the door which was already held open by Kristian who seemed as if he was avoiding any further eye contact with me.

What’s wrong with him all of a sudden?

I looked at his weird body language but then I heard a familiar voice which immediately made me turn towards the direction of the voice and there I saw him talking to some people. A smile immediately formed on my face seeing him. He was wearing a dark grey slim fit tuxedo but what made him look more handsome was his new haircut. His hair was nicely and closely trimmed around the edges. The cut is even, and the haircut looked tidy. The hairstyle suited him and this enhanced his face even more.

He was talking to whom I guessed as his business clients.

“By the way, I forgot to tell you something,” I heard Kristian’s voice from behind me and I turned to look at him.

“You look strikingly enticing today,” he grinned and I smiled mouthing a ‘thank you’ to him.

“But I think you will be in trouble,” he smirked to which I furrowed my eyebrows confused.

“But why?” I asked and he shrugged before turning around and leaving towards the other side of the hall.

“Ask this to Zachary by yourself,” he said before leaving.

“Huh?” I thought.

It was not really a big hall and only a few people were present inside the hall. But the interior inside was amazing with white walls and white tiles gave it a futuristic look. People were drinking wine, while some ladies were standing in groups chatting and gossiping.

“I was thinking about a proposal Mr. Suliivan,” I heard and turned back towards Zachary who has still not noticed my presence.

“Proposal?” he asked.

“Have you met my daughter Lidia?” the man asked and Zachary shifted in his position buttoning up his suit.

“I guess I’ve met her,” Zachary replied and the man looked happy all of a sudden.

“Now how about knowing he-” the man was cut off by another man “Oh don’t even think about that Felice!” the second man laughed sipping his wine.

“And why not?” the man asked and the second man smiled “Because Mr. Sullivan is a married man,” he laughed and the first man looked taken aback.

“Is it?” he asked directly to Zachary.

“Indeed,” Zachary smiled genuinely. A warm sensation engulfed my body when I realized he still regards himself married and as my husband. But again guilt washed over me when I remembered the last thing he told me.

But it was always Nicholas! Nicholas and Nicholas to you!

It’s not true, I admit his advances went unnoticed by me but when I fell in love with him, it was he who was always in my mind and even in my heart. It was only because of him I was able to move on from Nicholas’s memories. It was because I fell in love with him, I forgot Nicholas so easily. And the love that I felt for Zachary was even more than I ever felt for Nicholas. So large that I doubt I ever loved Nicholas heartily. But with Zachary, I was always myself. Even though I loathed and hated him in the beginning but still I felt comfortable and warm whenever he was near me.

He helped me when I was sick.

He saved me from the elevator.

He saved my life once multiple times, risking his from the enemies.

He captured both Vito and Nicholas.

He came after me even though I was the one who left him.

He cared for me.

And he even declared that he loves me.

What more do I need?

“He is right! I am totally an Idiot!” I smiled to myself “His idiot,”

“Oh forgive me I didn’t know that!” the man said and Zachary nodded his head.

“So, where is Mrs. Sullivan?” the man asked and that’s where I watched Zachary’s body tensed up.

Is he still mad at me?

No problem. He can't stay mad at me forever.

Taking in a deep breath, I closed my eyes and prepared myself for what I had planned to do.

"Everything will be alright Juliette. You can do this!" self-motivating myself I opened my eyes with a determined look but then the color drained my face when I saw the lady standing next to Zachary.

Loana Ularu.

She was wearing a beige colored gown and she stood clinging to Zachary much to my annoyance as she wrapped her hand around his elbow showing off her perfectly manicured nails nail and a big diamond ring.

Anger rose up in my body as I watched the way she was looking and clinging to Zachary. Zachar, on the other hand, chose to ignore her presence but still...

"Oh, I am Loana Ularu. Nice to meet you all," she said in a fake sweet tone as she introduced herself to the people before Zachary.

"I am his-" before she could complete I butted in. I had to...

"And I am Mrs. Juliette Sullivan," I said as I held my chin high and with confidence and determinacy carried myself towards them. The man turned to look at my direction while Zachary looked surprised to see me whilst Loana seemed to dig her nails in Zachary's arms to which he seemed oblivious to. Oh, Zachary...

"And I am his wife," I smiled at each of the men before standing next to Zachary whose eyes were trained on me. Battling my eyelashes I smiled at him and gave a fake smile to Loana who looked as if she wanted to throttle me. In your dreams...

"Oh, hello Mrs. Sullivan," the second man said and I nodded at him.

"Finally we get to see you. It's nice to meet you," the first man whose name I guessed as Felice said and I looked back at Zachary who was still staring down at me.

"Nice to meet you too," I replied feeling lost in Zachary's brown twinkling eyes.

"Hello," my eyes averted to Loana "It's nice to see you too. Long time isn't it?" I asked raising an eyebrow.

"Indeed!" she said rolling her eyes looking uninterested. My eyes fell on her hand which was still on Zachary's forearm.

"Zac-" she opened her mouth to speak but I cut her off "Honey, I am feeling thirsty all of a sudden. Can we go there and drink something?" I asked and Zachary's eyes widen as if he just got a trauma.

Awww...

“Why don’t go and drink by yoursel-” this time she was cut off by none other but Zachary himself “Sure,” he said not even glancing her way. He removed her hand all the while training his eyes on me and excused himself from the people and an angry looking Loana before walking after me towards the other side of the hall.

“Juliette!” he spoke once we reached the table where the water glasses were arranged.

“Yes?” I asked as I raised a glass and gulped down the cool water which immediately gave relief to my tensed nerves and thirsty throat.

“What are you…” lowering the glass I wiped my mouth and looked back at him questionably why he stopped only to find him staring at my neck. I smiled and wiped the water that has managed to trickle down while I was drinking from my mouth “What are you…”

“Zachary!” I snapped my finger before his eyes which broke him out of his stance “Right!” he looked here and there before looking back at me.

“What are doing here?” he yelled and that brought people’s attention to us. I raised an eyebrow at him while he smiled at the people who were looking at us before continuing “What are doing in here Juliette?” he asked smiling at me to cheat the people who were watching us.

“Oh, I shouldn’t be here?” I asked keeping the glass on the table.

“I don’t mea- and what are you wearing?” he glared at me and forwarded his hand to hold my arm but I took a side step to avoid his contact.

“What the…” he said and stopped mid-sentence while I laughed at him inwardly.

“I am wearing a dress,” I said and he muttered something under his breath before reaching forward to take my hand in his but once again I avoided his contact.

“What do you think you are doing?” he asked with rage filling his eyes.

“What did I do now?” I asked innocently battling my eyelashes.

“This!” he gritted.

“This what?” I asked.

“This!” he gritted once again.

I looked down and gasped “You are right Zachary. How did I not notice that?” I asked looking horrified as if I just witnessed a ghost.

“What?” he questioned looking confused.

“How come I didn’t notice this? Look! here are some snap buttons!” I said as I showed him the hem of my dress.

“It to shorten the dress. I can fold it and snap it. Then boom! The dress will” I pulled the dress up little high from its hem revealing the skin on my thigh “look more am-”

“Nonsense!” forcibly he pulled the hem of my dress down by himself.

“What?” I asked amazed by his reaction.

“What what? You are wearing a dress too short for my liking. I don’t people seeing yo-”

“But I remember you brought me a dress like last time for the business award. Did you forget that? You didn’t have any problem back th-”

“Of course I did! That and this dress is too short. I am telling you I don’t like this-”

“So should I remove this dress?” I questioned holding the straps and pulling it down a little bit. A little bit...

“Juliette!” he snapped at me and pulled the straps up all by himself. But as his fingers touched my bare skin I couldn’t help but shiver with the need to be touched by him.

But then breaking myself out of the moment, I stepped back avoiding his touch and this time his face contoured with anger and he looked as if he would lash and yell at me any second but then he gritted out “What are you doing?”

“What?” I asked shrugging at him.

“Don’t play smart with me Juliette, I am warning you or-”

“Or what?” I challenged looking straight into his eyes. He gazed into my eyes and then exhaled out a breath.

“What is your problem, Zachary? I am doing what you wanted me to do!” I told him and he squinted his eyes at me.

“Did you forget? You told me not to touch you yesterda- oh I mean today” I smiled sheepishly at him.

“What?” he questioned.

“I mean early in the morning! when you came to my house! At the time of leaving...Remember now?” I asked wiggling my eyebrows.

“I remember that!” he snapped.

“I didn’t mean that!” he gritted as he racked his hands through his hair.

“Really? Oh, so that means I can touch you?” I asked all of a sudden and watched as he froze in his position with his hand on his hair.

“By the way, I love your new hairstyle!” I said eyeing his hair.

“Juliette!” he held both of my arms and I watched as his facial expression changed to a worried one.

“What is wrong with you?” he asked worriedness clear in his voice.

“You know something?” I asked smiling at him.

“I guess this is the first time in your life when you have to open your mouth so many times to speak isn’t it hu? hu?” I wiggled my eyebrows at him and he looked at me void of any emotions. He stood there still holding my arms in his hands before he blinked few times and opened his mouth to speak but then closed it as if no words formed in his mouth. The moment was interrupted by none other than the noisy Loana herself.

“Zackie!” she chirped standing next to Zachary who was still looking at me avoiding or should I say oblivious to her presence.

She looked at Zachary’s hands on mine and then at me. I watched as her jaws locked and she gritted her teeth in annoyance.

“Zack-”

“It’s Mr. Sullivan to you Ms. Ularu,” Zachary spoke after a while cutting her off.

“Oh c’mon” she laughed “What’s the forma-”

“Did you not hear him? It’s Mr. Sullivan to you,” I said narrowing my eyes at her. She stopped mid-sentence and glared at me.

“I can call him whatever I want! It’s personal. It’s between him and-” removing Zachary’s hand from my arms I took a side step and stood directly before Loana “There is nothing between you and him. Everything related to him is related to me because...” I smiled sweetly at her “I am his wife and he is my husband after all,” I completed smirking at her.

She balled her fists and her breathing shortened as she eyed me angrily “Zackie look at h-”

“I said it’s Mr. Sullivan for you Ms. Ularu! You heard my wife already” I heard Zachary’s cold tone and I knew it that he was already looking at her with his sharp soul-piercing look which he uses on his second business to deal with his enemies.

Ularu eyes widened and I watched sweat formed on her chin and forehead as she looked at Zachary and then back at me. She took a step back but I lunged forward and hugged her catching her off guard.

“Saw it? Heard it? Got it? I am his wife. His WIFE. And by the way, he told me that he loves me and nobody else in this world.So remember that next time you try to put your filthy hands on my husband because next time I see your plastic hands on my man I’ll rip your throat by my own hands,” I whispered with venom filled in my voice.

As I pulled myself from her I looked at her and with a smile, I completed "And I mean it!"

She looked taken aback for a second but then composed herself and smiling at the people who were intently watching us turned on her heels and disappeared into the crowd.

I hope she doesn't trail after him again...

"Juliette!" I smiled to myself and turned around to face Zachary.

"We are leaving right now!" he whispered-yelled at me and narrowed his eyes at me when I opened my mouth to speak as if warning me not speak a word.

"But what about this party?" I asked as I followed him while he took long strides to get out of the hall.

"Party can go to hell," I heard him mutter which immediately made me giggle. But I stopped when he turned and glared at me.

"After you gentleman," I held the door open for him as I gestured him to walk out first.

He looked at me and muttering "what an Idiot...Clown!" he walked out and I followed him laughing silently at him.

As we walked past the guards who tried to stop me when I first came here from entering looked at in shock and in horror when they saw Zachary walking out with anger emitting from his body. Probably, they thought I have complained about the incident to him and he was here to fire them but to their shock, Zachary walked past them without even bothering to witnessing their presence. I ran after him out of the hall but stopped and looked back at the guards who were still looking our way. I winked at them comically, letting them know that everything is alright. They looked taken aback for a second but then smiled at me and to each other looking relieved.

"Juliette!" roared the tiger.

"Ah! Coming!" I yelled and followed Zachary out of the building.

xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 57

Juliette Pov

“Where are you going?” he called after me sounding irritated when I stopped following him and walked the other direction where I had parked Tess’s car.

“Eh? To my car!” I said and turned around walking towards the car.

“Juliette!” he called and soon I felt his hand on my shoulder.

“You are coming with me!” he told me as he turned me around and I looked at him uninterestingly.

“Why? Where are we going and stop touching me!” I removed his hand from my shoulder as I took a step backward.

“I’ll do whatever I want!” he gritted his teeth and got hold of my arm tightly as he began to pull me towards his car’s direction.

“Wait! But what about my car? It’s not actually mine, I borrowed it from my friend Tess. I can’t just abandon it here!” I said and tried to match his pace with my heels as he dragged me towards his car.

“I’ll have my driver take it back to your house!” was all he said.

“Really? That would be great! By the way whe-” he turned around swiftly as he pulled me towards him.

“Keep your mouth shut!” he said in a low tone warning me to open my mouth and I put my finger on my lips nodding agreeing with him.

As if...

He huffed out air and turned around while I smirked at him but composed myself when he turned once again to look at me.

“Get in!” he said as his car beeped when he unlocked it using his remote keys.

“But where ar-” he pulled the door open and shoved me inside.

“Hey! You don’t need to be so mean!” I yelled but he slammed the door on my face and walked to the other side. I watched as he stood there for some minutes before opening the car door and entering.

“Put your seat belts on!” he said more like commanded whilst he put on his seatbelt and ignited the engine. I did as he said not because I followed his order but for my own safety or else I knew I would fly out of the damn car if he loses his mind in the middle of the ride.

“So? Where are we going?” I asked as I played with the strap of my belt.

He stayed quiet not even glancing my way. I looked at him while he drove using his one hand and with the other, he rubbed his temple. He looked agitated and restless all of a sudden.

“What did you eat today?” I heard him and I hummed in response.

“I asked,” he said and then snapped at me “What did you eat today?” which made me jerked up in my seat.

“Woah!” I laughed and then shook my head no.

“Nothing!” I replied and he looked back at the road.

“Then what did you drink?” he asked and I shrugged my shoulders “water I guess,” I replied.

“Why are you asking?” I asked and he looked at me and then back at the road and honked multiple times even though there was no one in his way.

“You are weird sometimes,” I muttered to myself.

“Not as you!” he replied.

Dog ears...

As I watched the turn he took I recalled the direction Willi had told me previously to his penthouse.

So we are going to his penthouse...

“I see!” I mumbled.

As the car took a halt, I looked out of the window to find us under the gigantic building called ‘Grand Virid Premium’.

“You live here?” I asked amazed by the majestic grandeur of the building but when no one replied I turned to look at him only to find his seat empty.

“Zachary?” I said and the door on my side opened “Come out!” he offered me his hand which I ignored as I removed my seat belts and jumped out of the car completely ignoring him., I heard him taking sharp intakes though.

“Oh wow!” I said impressed by the surrounding as I walked into his penthouse. I walked up to the glass window where the view of the city was nostalgic. I wondered how it would look in the night and even though we were in great heights the hustle and bustle of the city still reached our ears if paid close attention to it. Everything inside was magnificent and extraordinarily beautiful. The interior was of top-class and everything was designed to trifles. But contrasting to his personality the interior was warm and loving. Starting from the floor to the roof, and even the furniture was chosen white.

“Now tell me!” I heard his voice from behind me and I turned around raising my eyebrows at him.

“You know what Zachary let’s play a game, shall we?” I asked as I took a seat on the couch.

“Answer my questions Juliette, don’t try to change the subject!” he said and stood before me. His soul penetrating eyes gazing down at me as if trying to read me.

“What about my game?” I questioned and once again he chose to avoid my question.

“Why were you there today and in- in this dress? I thought you had told me beforehand that you don’t wear this type of dresses so why?” he questioned and that brought a smile on my face. A sly smile.

“You are surely talking a lot today Zachar-”

“Juliette!” he slammed his hand on the headrest of the couch “Answer the damn question,” he asked in a deep low voice.

His eyes glaring at me but instead of being frightened like I used to be I smirked and crossed my arms over my chest. His eyes followed my action and ended up on my chest but then he shot up from his position and turned around shoving his hands into pant pockets.

“Answer my question,”

“Not until you play the game with me,” I said which made him turn around to face me.

“Juliett-”

“Let’s have something interesting in this. If you win I’ll answer your questions,” I said as I stood up from my place and walked towards the table where I poured a glass of water for myself and gulped it down.

“And if I win,” I turned around with a sly smile on my face “You will have to give me something,” folding my hands on my back I walked up to him.

“What do you want?’ he asked as he looked nervous all of a sudden.

“You will see that!” I answered and walked around him whilst he stood in the same place.

“What type of game is it?” he asked and I smiled inwardly before answering.

“Q and A”

“Huh?”

“Simple Question and Answers...”

“Questions about what?” he questioned when I stood behind him.

“Oh, you know the general stuff. General knowledge,” I said and walked closer to him when he removed his hand from his pants pockets.

“What?” I heard him mumble. He must be really confused right now and I knew it because it was already my intention from the beginning to make him, even more, confuse than he already is.

“By the way, I forgot to tell you about the rules,” I said more like whispered into his ears from behind.

“Rules?”

“Number One, Only I am the one who is going to ask you questions and you will the one who will be answering,”

“Wha-”

“Let me finish!”

“So? Yeah Number two, you can’t interfere me,”

“Number three, you can’t move from your place”

“Number four, you can’t answer anything else than the questions that is asked to you,” I chuckled a little before continuing “let me check your IQ level today,”

“And finally number five, you can’t close your eyes,” I finished as I stood before him and made an eye contact.

“What are these things?” he questioned and I shrugged “My game, my rules”

“Whatever! Just ask your questions and finish this all,” he said and turned around but then stopped when I opened my mouth “The interesting part of this game is the fewer clothes I have on me the fewer is your winning chances,” I said and like a bolt of electricity he turned around with widened eyes.

“Wh- What did you just say?” he asked even though he heard me.

“You heard it. The game is simple. I will ask you questions and you will answer, the wrong answer will make me strip something from my body but at the same time, a right answer will make me put the thing back on me. So, in simple terms the lesser the clothes I will have on me... You lose,” I smirked when he gave me a disbelief look.

“What type of game is this?” he breathed out looking out of breath all of sudden.

“The usual, haven’t you played this type of game before?” I questioned and he narrowed his eyes at me “Oh you have played this type of game beforehand?” he cross-questioned me.

“Of course!” I shrugged my shoulders at him.

"With whom? with that Emm-"

"Stop thinking it that level huh! Of course, I have played this type of game beforehand but only with girls and it was keeping money or belongings instead of stripping clothes," I answered checking my nails.

"So why are yo- I mean yo- Why you play- str- wi-th I mean befo- me," he kept on stuttering like an old record.

"Are you done?" I asked raising an eyebrow.

"Shall we play or are you afraid?" I questioned mocking him in the process.

"Afraid?" he questioned back.

"Afraid that you will lose of course!" I shrugged my shoulders and wiggled my eyebrows at him.

"Who do you think I am?" he asked as he took a step forward but I held my hand out for him to stop.

"Whoever you are! Just tell me will if you are in," I said and he adjusted his suit before nodding reluctantly.

"Good!" I smirked at him.

"Take a seat," I gestured the couch and he looked down before walking to it and taking a seat on it.

"You remember the rul-"

"I bloody remember! Now start the game," he snapped at me. I raised my eyebrows at him and on his behavior before dragging the chair from the dining table before him.

Taking a seat on the chair, I made sure that every move of mine should look sexy. I can't forget what he told me last night Don't touch me... I'll make sure his body crave for me and only me.

"So let's start with an easy question," I smiled at him to which he rolled his eyes at me.

"I have seen you watching football most of the time so, Who won the Best Footballer 2016 in the World?" I asked and he scoffed at me "Cristiano Ronaldo," he answered and I clapped a little "Right answer,"

"Who is the UN secretary general?"

"Antonio Guterres," he answered correctly without any hesitation.

"Mostly which gases found of the planet Jupiter?"

"Simple Hydrogen and Helium," he answered looking proud when I smiled at him for answering the correct answer.

“To the next one, Who is the founder of the social networking service Twitter?” at this question I saw he looked little nervous.

I knew he had no knowledge about social media sites because he used none but then he answered “Mark Zuckerberg,” he said and I exhaled out air as I shifted on my position keeping my hands on my knees I smiled at him “He is the founder of Facebook, Mr. Sullivan. So, congratulations for your first wrong answer,” I smirked when I raised my hand to strip something from my body and I watched as the color drained from his face. Probably he thought I would strip my clothes off. But then I removed my earrings as I kept it before him on the coffee table which was the only thing that separated us.

“Next..”

“Who discovered first the blood circulation?”

“How in the world will I know-”

“Ah! ah! This is against the rules. You can’t speak anything else than the answer,” I reminded him and he made up a face but then I removed my heels slowly “Rules are Rules” I smiled at him when I noticed his eyes trained on my moves.

“Who invented contact lenses?”

“Your father!” he replied more like snapped angrily but to my benefit going against the rules.

“No, he didn’t! Minus point!” I glared at him and said in a mocking tone as I removed the bracelet and watch from my wrist.

“Next... Who...” the game continued with him answering questions correct which made me put the things back on me that I had removed earlier but then he would answer and some he couldn’t answer because even I didn’t know the answer of who invented a pencil.

“What is the name of the first Romanian fiction film?” I questioned and he averted his gaze away from my face.

“I guess you don’t know that!” I said and unhooked the first button just below my already plunging neck which enabled more skin to flash.

As I looked back at Zachary he was looking back at me or should I say on my...

“Who is the President of France?” I questioned

“Emmanuel Macron,” he answered correctly which made me undo my move by hooking the first button back on. He looked disappointed all of a sudden as he shifted on his position and looked at me.

“Who is the president of America?” I asked and he opened his mouth to answer “D- Barack Obama,” he answered and that literally brought a smile on my face.

Finally!

“Wrong! It’s Donald Trump. In which year do you live?” I asked sounding irritated but I unhooked the hook once again and I watched as he moved forward in his place. His eyes still on my bosom.

“So what is the capital of-”

“Fuck it!” he stood up from his place and I smirked in triumphant “and you lose” I whispered.

I watched as he huffed out air, his chest rumbling and his hands balled into fists. His eyes color had changed by the time he took long strides to reach me and pulling me by my arms he pulled me up. Instead of brown eyes what I witnessed was deep brown eyes with dilated pupils which only indicated lust. He pulled me to him and angled his face as if he was going to kiss me but before he could I put my palm on his mouth which caught him off guard because he looked at me with questioning yet desire filled eyes.

“You can’t touch me!” I reminded him.

He pulled my hand off his mouth and held my head “I can do whatever I want,” forcibly he tried to kiss me but then I turned my head and tried to push him off me.

“Stop resisting me god damn it!” he said frustrated which made me want to laugh on his face.

“I am just following your wishe-wishes. You told me not to touch you yes-” he cut me off as he got hold of my hand and folded it backward pulling me close to him.

“Forget that I ever uttered that stupid thing,” he said and once again tried to kiss me only for me to turn my head blocking his kiss. But then his lips ended on my cheek that made the things even worse. I had never really imagined that I would have to handle him in this condition. To make things worse than it already was he started placing wet kisses all over my face and then on my neck which made my knee go jelly.

This is not good...

I will literally give up to him.

But I can’t.

Not until I hear what I wanted to hear.

“Zachary! Za-Zachary! Zac!” I snapped at him when he continued ignoring my pleas to stop.

But I don’t really want him to stop...

But then...I can’t let him touch me until I hear it again.

But like a magic, it worked. He stopped his assaults and looked at me.

Hmm... I guess it worked.

“What did you just say?” he asked and I furrowed my eyebrows.

“I said sto-”

“No! Not that what did you just say now?” he questioned and trying to recall what I actually said the name left my mouth even before I realized it “Zac?” I said slowly and watched as his eyes dilated and contracted but then a different emotion appeared on his face and before I could question what’s wrong his lips were on mine.

Disabling me from moving from my place he held my hands firmly on my back as he ravished my lips as he kissed me passionately and wildly not even letting me speak, completely ignoring my pleas. As much as I hate to confess it but I was starting to give in to his kisses and affection. So badly, that at one point I stopped resisting and let him do whatever he wanted but then as if someone threw a bucket full of water on me I opened my eyes once again resisting to him when he pulled away. Both of us were breathless as we panted and breathed in desperately for air.

“Today, you are mine!” he said all of a sudden and before I could open my mouth he let go of my hand and in a swift moment carried me up in bridal style.

“Zachary! Zachary!” I gasped in shock and held his collar scared for my life.

“Put me down! Zachary! Put me down” I yelled when he took long strides towards his room and the next thing I knew was me being thrown on something soft like feather and I bounced on it due to the effect of my fall but before I could throw a fit or yell at him for throwing me he was already hovering over me.

“Zachary! You jerk! Get off!” I pushed on his chest while he pulled me to him by my waist and sat on top of me.

“What the hell are you doing? Ah!” I complained when he started stripping himself.

“Playing my own stripping game, cause I can’t make love you while I am dressed. I need to be naked and I need to strip yo-”

“Stop! Stop!” I put my hands on my ears stopping myself from hearing whatever he was saying.

Damn my love hormones!

Damn my love for him!

My heartbeat speeds up on every single comment he makes.

Damn! that butterflies on my stomach.

Damn you Cupid!

I am just fed up with my heart for reacting to every single thing he does. Every single little thing of him makes me want to want him and love him more.

“Zachary get off!” I tried to put on a serious face as I warned him to get off but to my shock, all he did was remove his suit and then unbutton the first few buttons of his shirt allowing me to see his well-defined sculpted chest.

“Oh wo- No! Juliette! get a hold on yourself!” mentally scolding myself I tried to push him once again.

“Stop resisting. I know you want me else you wouldn’t have played that stupid game with me. This is all your fault!” he said as he continued unbuttoning his shirt until his navel but then his hands directly went down and lifted my left leg up in the air by holding it just below my knees as he adjusted himself and pulled me more to him as I continued wiggling and resisting him.

He landed on top of me and as I was wiggling he seemed like he lost his balance and he tumbled on me.

“Z-achary!” I breathed out because of his weight on me.

But that didn’t stop him. Raising my leg in the air he positioned himself on me and his lips ended up on the valley on my breast taking the air out of my lungs out of shock.

“Zachary!” I snapped at him for his irresistible assaults.

As he continued to kiss I took in deep breath in and out before applying all my force and finally I succeeded in pushing him away from but only for a little moment because he got his balance but before he could do any assault on me I was rolled down from the bed and was already on my heels running out the room.

“Juliette!” came his angry voice as he was already before me trying o stop me. I ran back to the room where we just played the game and ran towards the couch.

“Stop! Juliette!” he called as he ran after me.

“The tables have turned hu? Today you are running after me!” I mocked him when he tried to get a hold on me but I douched his touch and ran circling the couch.

“But unlike you, I won’t end up in a damn fountain!” he replied and I glared at him but then he continued “I will definitely end up in my bed,” he smirked and lunged at me but I crouched down avoiding him and again running on my heels.

“In your dreams!” I threw the pillow on him that I took from the couch.

“Oh yeah? Come here!” he yelled.

“No! Not until you tell me what I have been waiting f-” I ran towards the same bedroom and before he could enter I closed the door on his face, locking it in the process.

“Open the damn door Juliette!” he banged on the door.

“No! You stay there! You deserve that!” I said and put my ear on the door wanting to hear what he was doing.

“You will regret this! Juliette!” I heard him yell and I laughed at it when my eyes fell on the glass window. Without realizing what I was doing I was already running towards its direction when Zachary reached on the other side of the glass window at the same time as me.

We both got hold of the open window’s door and pulled it while I tried to lock the window whilst on the other hand he tried to pull it open. Waves of laughter erupted out of my mouth and I could hear him laugh when we fought and continued our assaults of pulling the door open.

“You think you’re smart?” I tried to close the glass window but he had more power than me for which he was easily pulling it open towards his direction.

“Let go!” because I was laughing it was becoming harder for me to close it when an idea formed in my mind.

“Ow!” I winced and in a moment he let go of the door and hurriedly I slammed it closed and locked it from inside.

“Juliette!” he looked worried for a moment but then he understood and he kept his hand on his waist looking at me with a neutral expression.

“Sly Fox!” I heard him and I threw my head back laughing harder.

“Oh really? Admit your defeat already!” I mocked him.

“Not until I make you scream my name,” he smirked and I gasped but then blushed as I racked a hand on my hair.

“You forgot something!” he said and I raised my eyebrows at him confused.

“This is my house! So,” he took a step back and from the drawer took something out which made me gasp in shock.

“I have the keys!” he showed me the spare keys as he walked turned around to walk towards the door probably to open it but I stopped him as I called him.

“Look, Zachary, I don’t want it!” I yelled as I stood near the window and glanced outside. He returned back to me on the other side of the window.

“What do you mean?” he asked in a low tone. All of a sudden the liveliness in him disappearing and a dark aura engulfed him. His eyes turned void of any emotions when I said that.

“I mean I don’t want to do it with you!”

“What? Then with wh-” before his face could contour into anger I stopped him “No, I mean I can’t-do it with you until you give me what I want,” I said and creasing his forehead he shifted on his position before replying “And what is that?” he asked slowly.

“That words!” I said as hope and happiness lit up my face.

“Words?” he questioned almost with a baffled expression.

“That words! Zachary that three words!” I said and hoped he understood what I meant. And thankfully it looked as if it struck him as the tension dissipated from his face and once again his eyes twinkled with mirth.

“Why is it important?” he questioned which made me huff at him.

“You can’t enter the room unless you tell me those words,” I warned him.

“Hu? I have the keys. Forgot?” he asked looking amused all of a sudden.

“Do you really think I will let you touch me even if you succeed coming in here?’ I snapped at him feeling the anger boiling inside me. How dare he?

He seemed to notice the change in my mood as he sagged his shoulders and racked his hand on his hair.

“Okay fine!” he huffed out and I felt light headed once again as I jumped on my place excited patiently but desperately wanting to hear it from his mouth. He noticed my happiness and smile sideways as he opened his mouth and I took forward wanting to hear it but then he closed his mouth.

“Juliette I-” he continued opening and stopping mid-sentence for five minutes while I paced around the room, stood before him, leaned against the glass window, sat on the bed.

“Fuck!” I heard him curse.

“So is it so difficult for you to say three simple words out to me?” I grew frustrated by his attempts and yelled at him for that.

“Excuse me? Simple? You call it simple?” he snapped back.

“You have no right to snap at me when you are at fault! Do you understand Mr. Zachary Udolf Sullivan!” I snapped back crossing my hands over my chest and looking the other way disheartened and miffed at him at the same time.

“Look! Juliett-” he said but I cut him off rudely “No! Don’t take my name because you were lying yesterday. You don’t have any feelings for me! You can’t even say the simple three words to the woman you love and you call it l-o,”

“Juliette!” he slammed his hand on the glass door so hard that made me squeal frightened...

Thankfully the window didn't break and I looked at him to find him glaring at me with rage filled eyes. "My love doesn't need any words to express myself do you understand! So, don't question my love once again," he warned as I felt the end of my eyes stinging.

"Yes? Why can't you say that? You told me that you love me so why can't you give me the only thing I want? I thought it becomes easy for the people to express their feelings when they are in love and here it's just some mere words. Can't you do that for me?" I cried out to him and soon watched as regret filled his face for lashing out at me.

"Look! Juliette, you don't understand! It's not easy like it seems. It's diff-" I cut him off in the middle "What is not easy? I love you, Zachary. See? You have to say it loud to me like I jus-" I stopped in the middle when I realized what I just did,

Oh shoot!

I looked at him to find him frozen on his spot as he looked at me with wide eyes for the umpteenth time of the day. I felt my cheeks burning and my lips trembling. Even my hands trembled. I turned around swiftly putting my hands on my mouth stopping myself from squealing.

"Juliette yo- you are really dumb!" I muttered to myself feeling shy.

"So it's not really a mere word after all," I heard him and slowly when I turned around to look at him I found his head lowered down as he kept one of his hand on the wall next to the window and another on his heart.

As I realized I had managed to raise his heartbeat just like he does to mine a smile appeared on my lips and I continued watching him intently wanting to know more about what effect I have on him.

"Juliette?" I looked at him and then he opened his mouth to speak "I love you," making me his for eternity as he raised his head up and looked straight into my eyes he said, "I really do."

Slowly, I watched as he turned around and left the place while I did the same as I walked towards the door but stood before it for a while as I couldn't stop the happy tears trickling down my face. As much as I tried to wipe the more it fell down from my eyes.

"He loves me," I muttered to myself putting a hand on my heart as I repeated "Do you hear it? He said he loves me" I told my wildly beating heart and when I finally managed to control myself, I composed myself and wiped the tears away from my face as I tried to smile and slowly put my hand on the doorknob before rotating it open only to reveal him already standing there with his right hand on the side of the wall above his head with his shirt open hanging loosely on his body while he looked at me.

“I can’t promise you that I will not make you cry because after few hours you won’t be able to get up from the bed for days,” he whispered huskily which made me look down in order to hide the blush that formed on my face.

“Get in!” I muttered as I turned around walked in while he closed the door and followed me inside.

Xxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxxx

Chapter 58 Epilogue: The start of a new beginning

Juliette Pov

The moment was supposed to be the best day of my life because it was going to be the day that would be carved in my heart and soul for the rest of my soul. Yet, I could feel the tension rising in my body as I walked in all the while feeling my heart pounding against my chest and feeling every nerve in my body bouncing up and down. There was this only question which kept on nagging my subconsciousness and that was what will happen next? What should I do next?

Even though I was the one who planned to seduce him from the beginning to the point where somehow I knew we would definitely end up in this type of situation but still never really planned ahead. I was actually going with the flow...

What will I do now?

I didn't even realize when I stopped in my tracks fidgetting my fingers in tension. Nervousness and anxiety filling up in my body only by thinking that it's going to hurt. But then I felt his presence behind me as his breath fanned over my shoulder and all of a sudden I felt his cold finger tracing my forearm as he raised his finger till my straps and slowly laced his finger with it and pulled it a little before bending down and placing a soft kiss on my shoulder taking my breaths away in the process.

A sigh escaped my mouth as I arched my neck to the other side letting him have the access over my skin as I closed my eyes and thought about letting him take up only because I didn't know what to do...

"Juliette," I heard him whisper and the next moment I felt myself being lifted up in the air bridal style as I held his shirt and let him carry me to the bed all the while his eyes locked with mine as he placed me down softly on the bed and took a step back only to get rid of his shirt.

My eyes seemed to remain glued to his actions as I laid there on the bed waiting for his advances.

I watched his actions all the while reminding myself to breathe if I didn't wish to ruin the moment by losing my consciousness.

Inhale and exhale Juliette.... Just inhale and exhale...

Hovering over me, he bent down and kissed my forehead before trailing kisses around my face and down towards my neck. Feeling the fire of need burning within inside me, I put my hands around his neck pulling him down when he captured my mouth into a passionate kiss. My breast rubbing against his bare chest, my hands moving around his back, while his roamed

around the sides of my stomach and then lifting my right leg up for him to adjust between my legs. The fire has been lit, the bullet has been shot. The stream of passion and urgency cascaded down as I felt his fingers playing with the hem of my cloth when in a jerk he sat up and removed the dress from my body in a swift motion leaving me just in my panty.

Feeling the blanket of shyness hovering over me because I was now lying down with the top portion of my body flashed naked before a man, I moved my hands swiftly to cover my breast until I was stopped by him who held both of my hands in his and looked straight into my eyes.

"I don't really have any words to let you know how happy I am feeling right now and I don't even have any idea what to tell that would make you feel comfortable with me but I hope that you will understand what I feel for you. Look into my eyes, words can't define how much I want you but then I know my limits and I have my dignity, I won't lay a finger upon you if you don't want me to," he finished and that was enough for all my nervousness and anxiety to diminish away. A small smile appeared on my lips as I gazed into his brown orbs as I saw the truthness in them. Blinking my eyes several times, I took in deep breaths and then nodded at him letting him know that I was ready. Ready for him.

As the muscles in my hands began to relax he gazed down at me, his eyes filled with sincerity as I let him remove my hands away from my chest. His burning gaze fell on my flashed skin making me all flushed and as I was about to open my mouth to speak he lowered down and placed a soft skin in between my boobs. Just a mere touch of him filled my body with wild thoughts and desires. My palms balled up feeling the need to be touched once again and I closed my eyes feeling my core throbbing and burning up with desire.

His lips trailed up until it stopped in the crook of my neck when he moved my hand up over my head and came back on kissing me on my lips before removing his hold on my hands and looking into my eyes. His eyes told me not to move and I waited patiently as he proceeded with his torturing acts of ravishing my body. Goosebumps formed on my skin as he took one of my nipples into his warm mouth, my back arched with pleasure and a moan left my mouth as I felt the foreign feelings and emotions surfacing in my body. His other hand got hold of my waist as he trailed kisses down and stopped right under my belly button. I opened my eyes to look at what he was doing to find him already looking at me.

It was as if he was still giving me a chance to stop him because he got up slowly all the while locking his eyes with mine. The anxiousness and nervousness that I felt a few minutes ago were long gone. My body heated up because of his torturous kisses and that made me feel something new that I never really had ever thought before. But anything I wanted to do at the moment was him to progress faster because the swift breathing and the thudding of my heartbeat lit my desires.

As I felt his fingers over the strap of my panty I closed my eyes and rested my head back on the pillow. That was the end of mine of rest period because after that all I could remember was the pain as if I was being torn apart which was later replaced by pleasure, his hands intertwined

with mine as he went slowly in and out trying his best not to hurt me, his whispering of sweet nothings into my ear, his kissing my tears away, him reassuring me that everything was going to be alright were the only memory that stored on the day when I surrendered myself completely to him.

“What is this?” I groaned as I heard the faint noise of something beeping continuously.

My eyelids felt heavy as I tried to open them but shut it as the rays of light hit my eyes. Groaning a little, I rubbed my eyes and tried to lift my body up using my elbow but then a hiss left my mouth as I felt the lower region of my body. My hand immediately went down to touch my core and found it swollen. Then everything flooded back into my mind and I remembered everything that happened. My cheeks heat up as I rubbed the side of the face and pulled the quilt up to hide my chest. As I tried to move a hand circled around my waist and pulled me back.

“You are awake, good. I’m not done with you yet,” said Zachary’s in his husky tone and pulled me back to the bed. I landed straight on his chest and made an attempt to get up but he held both of my forearms and in a swift moment turn us around with me under him and him above me. A mysterious glint dazzled in his eyes as his mouth turned up into a lopsided grin and he pulled both of my hands up above my head and kissed my cheek.

“Are you hurt?” he whispered into my ear and slowly I nodded a no. Honestly, it wasn’t that bad as much as I had thought. In fact, I enjoyed every single bit of it. If anything I was feeling then it was tiredness because he continued giving me pleasure till I felt tired and asleep. I don’t even remember what happened after that.

“I tried my best to be gentle,” his breath fanned the nudge of my neck as he started trailing kisses down my neck.

“Should I continue?” he asked with the same mysterious glint in his eyes and unmindfully I nodded which resulted in him to grin at his fullest. His coquettish grin made me feel wild.

I could his manhood on my entrance and before I could speak anything he slid himself in, poking and pegging and slid in freely without any problem. Within minutes, the room was filled with my own sound of moaning. My nails dug into his back as he began to speed up his pace. Even though, I didn’t feel any pain still it was becoming hard for me to keep up with him. My own breaths came into my way of being conscious. I felt my eyes rolling back after a heated session of lovemaking and before I fell asleep for the second time of the day, I felt his lips on the side of my forehead as he pulled me closer to him and whispered a faint love you.

My eyes shot open when I felt something disturbing my sleep. The thing was in-between my legs and it poked me on my core. Gasping, I tried to move his manhood away using my hand and turned around on the bed to look at him. He slept on his side with one of his legs on mine and his hand sprawled over me lazily, as he slept soundly. His hair was a mess and I lifted my hand up and brushed his hair out of his forehead.

Man! He has long eyelashes.

I trailed my finger on his eyes and then at his nose. As I did that, sleepily he pulled me closer to him tightening his grip on me in the process. Flustered, I felt my heart beating vigorously against my chest which immediately brought a smile to my face.

“I don’t want to go ahead of you, I want to walk hand in hand with you wherever you go. I want to be with every single day. You don’t have any idea how much I love you” I smiled as I felt tears rolling down my eyes. Those were happy tears that had been stored since he confessed that he loves me.

“If anything else, I can promise to you then it will be off forever loving you. I’ll love you and only you till the very end,” a cry left my mouth and he shifted on his position. Not wanting him to wake up, I put my hand on head and raked my hand through his hair slowly but then he got hold of my hand and snuggled to it pulling it under his neck.

“You are the best thing that ever happened to me,” I confessed truly feeling my heart beat increase even further as I continued speaking to his sleeping form.

“I don’t really have any idea what you have been through and I do know that the problems that I have faced were nothing compared to what you have been through in your life and I wish you to never go through anything that hurts you ever again,” intertwined our hand before I pulled myself up and placed a kiss on his forehead.

“You have done a lot for me,” I said and tried to slide my hand away from his grip.

“Now it’s my time to do something for you,” I giggled when he tried to hold my hand as if missing the warmth.

“Someone is already missing me,” I chuckled as I pulled my hand away from his hold and taking the quilt, I covered him properly. Hopping out of the bed, I found my underwears on the ground and hurriedly wore it back when I heard my phone beeping notifying me of message notifications. As soon as I opened my phone, the screen was bombarded with notifications of missed calls and messages. Six missed calls from Kiara and two to three from mom while twelve from dad.

“What’s going on?” I thought as I adjusted my bra strap. Zachary shifted in his position and turned the other way in his sleep.

Dailing Kiara’s number I waited till she picked up the call and after two to three rings she picked huffing and panting as if she ran a marathon.

“Kiara?” I asked

“Oh, it’s you. Oh my god! Ju- Just a minute,” she panted and I heard her taking deep breaths before she responded.

“Yeah, Kiara what’s going on? Is everything alright?” I asked and looked back at Zachary. Before he could wake because of me, I took one of his shirt from his closet and his trousers and walked out of the room towards the living room.

“Thank God you called,” she whispered and I furrowed my eyebrows confused.

“Why are you whispering?” I asked with a low tone not wanting Zachary to wake up.

“Listen! Wherever you are. Don’t come back home now okay? I got this! I will handle everything. I promise,” she whispered and quickly buttoning up Zachary’s shirt I walked towards the glass window where I looked out towards the street. The sun was setting down and I watched as the birds flew away right before the window probably back to their home. Street lights were already on and people scurried away in several directions, a lot of hustle and bustle down there because of traffic.

“What? Why?” I asked biting my nails.

“Your parents are here. Somehow they got to know that Zachary is also in this town and they flew down here for you. Your father doesn’t wish you to be with Zachary. They have been trying your phone since morning but I have already told them that you and Zachary are back together,” she whispered and I heard my father’s voice in the background.

“You did a good job, Kiara, you don’t have any idea how dad has created misunderstanding between me and Zachary regarding divorce,” I said and held my forehead.

“Yeah?” she asked and I hummed in response.

“Moreover, Is everything alright between you two now? I hope you didn’t spoil everything like the last tim-” I cut her off with a groan.

“How many times will you make me feel as the villain? Yes, everything is fine between us now,” I said with a smile.

“What? Really? Ya-” she squealed but then lowered her voice “Yayyy,” she whispered.

“Look you don’t need to come here. I’ll take care of your parents. You be with Zac-”

“No! No. I am coming back home. It’s good that dad is here. I will make this clear to him that I want to be with Zachary now. And moreover I have planned a surprise for Zachary and for that I have to come back home first,” I said and I heard her gasp.

“You mean you want to clarify with your dad about all this today?” she asked and I nodded but then realized she can’t see me so said a yes in reply.

“In fact not today, but now. I am coming,” I said with determination and she said a quiet okay in response.

"Okay. I am with you. Come bac-" I heard her groaning and I furrowed my eyebrows when I heard her cursing under her breath.

"I am telling you, I will murder someone or worse commit suicide if this moron doesn't stop calling me every single minute," she said and that made me laugh.

"So our prince charming still after our princess eh?" I mocked her and she huffed in annoyance.

"Prince Charming my ass!" she cursed which made me laugh. After a chat, I hung up on her letting her know that I'll be there soon and turned around to go back to Zachary to wake him up but then stopped on my track when I saw the landline phone. An idea popped up in my mind and smiling I hurried to the phone where I called the hotel's number.

As I paced around the room impatiently waiting for my delivery the doorbell buzzed and I ran to the door and pulled it open to find the person whom I have been waiting for.

"Your Roses that you had asked for ma'am," the guy said as he passed the bouquet of red roses that I had asked for earlier in the phone. I handed him the money and replied a thank you before closing the door when he went away. Inhaling the smell of the roses, I smiled at myself.

"I hope you like them," I whispered to myself and plucking a rose out of the bouquet I went to the couch where I kept the bouquet and took the paper and the pen and scribble down.

Dear Husband,

Here is a lovely rose for my lovely husband.

I guess when you wake up you won't find me near you but don't heat up and go all Tarzan searching for me because I am already near you. Right in your heart ;)

Cheesy right? But get used to it! From now on you will be seeing this side of me every often :)

And yeah, don't think I am going anywhere. I will be right back before you can even blink. Guess what?

I am planning a sweet surprise for you.

Wait for me and yeah, I love you.

Your Wife.

Satisfied, with my work I kissed the paper and smiling to myself I tiptoed back to the room where I found him still in his sleep.

Guess someone is really tired.

Walking to the side of the bed I kept the rose down on the pillow with the letter and bent down where I placed a kiss down on his forehead "I will be right back," I whispered and lifting my purse from the nightstand I ran out happy and excited to return back to him and this time forever.

As I walked out of the building, people who went passed me turned around to look at me again and again before walking away. I was still in Zachary's shirt and track pants.

"What? I am wearing my husband's clothes," I threw my hands up in the air annoyed. As soon as I said that people looked the other way and I huffed out air "People these days," I muttered to myself.

As soon as a Taxi pulled up before me, I jumped in and told him the address of the house where Kiara and I lived. He pulled the meter down and drove off using the GPS. I smiled as I looked out of the window. The sun had already set down and it was already half past seven in the evening. Everything seemed so unreal. How my world has changed in a single year, I still can't believe. I fell in love with a man thinking him as the true love of my life then I believed that marrying him was my right choice but then Zachary entered my life and even in all those odds I fell in love with him. He made me realize my true self. I was always myself with him. He treated me well even though I hated him the most. Even in all those insults, care and love were hidden. I smiled when I remembered the time when I disturbed and annoyed him intentionally. I fell in his fountain, I even forced myself on him obviously drunk..., felt jealous and even tried to beat the shit out Loana.

I never really knew that I do have this side of mine. Never really thought I could ever raise my hand to actually hurt a woman who was after my husband. Never really thought I would fell in love once again after being betrayed.

All thanks to Zachary for bringing the best out of me.

As I felt my phone vibrating, I fished it out of the purse and immediately a smile formed on my face as I bit down on my lips seeing the caller ID displaying 'My Heartbeat'.

"Somebody is up and already searching for me I guess," I spoke playfully as I grinned all the while.

"Juliette why did you leave without me?" he said and I heard his restless voice.

"Did you not read my note?" I asked playing with my hair.

I feel like a teenager in love.

"I did! It's not necessary. Just come back to me," he said and I chuckled a little.

"I will. But before that, I need to do some work. I need to deal with my parents and then plan about the surprise," I told him and heard him sigh.

"When will you start listening to me?" he asked and I raised my eyebrow as I roamed my tongue over my teeth before speaking "When you start to listen to me," I said and heard him sighing for the second time.

“Your parents are here? So, why did you leave alone? Your father tried to separate us. I am coming. You can’t handle him on our own,” he said and I heard noises in the background.

“No, you will not!” I said out loud and watched as my taxi driver looked at me through his rearview mirror. I muttered a quiet sorry to him before focusing on Zachary.

“Who is there with you?” I heard Zachary’s voice.

“I am in a taxi,”

“I could have driven you back and why are you even going back? Your home is with me. You don’t need to explain anything to anyone. Tell your driver to take a U-turn and return back to me,” he said adamantly but I giggled at that.

“Zac you are really cute sometimes,” I cooed and heard a laugh cracking at the other end.

“Only you can call me that,” I heard him and I shifted on my seat “Liar! you have permitted Jace. I know it! He calls you Zac too,” I said and heard his throaty laugh.

“Okay, don’t try to change the topic. Fine, do whatever you want to do. But if your father is too out of control, call me. I’ll handle him,” he said and I rubbed my forehead “Zac! He is my father. Have trust in me, I can handle him,” I said and heard him humming.

“Okay. And you don’t really need to plan anything for me. You being with me is only what I have always wished for,” he told me and I felt tears threatening to spill out.

“Too much happiness,” I muttered to myself.

“Sorry? I can’t hear you. Did you just say something?” he asked and I realized he can’t really see me.

“No, Nothing. Zachary...”

“Yeah?”

“I love you,” I said truthfully and felt my heartbeat speeding up. I still can’t believe I feel butterflies in my stomach whenever I say it to him.

“Really?” he chuckled and I rolled my eyes.

“Yes, really!” I laughed.

“I’ll back before you even realize I was gone,” I said as I watched the driver taking a left turn towards the bridge.

“I hope so, because if you don’t then you know me. I will drag you back,” he joked but I knew him better. Even though he was joking, he would actually do that if I didn’t return.

“Okay, sir!” I said playfully.

“And I have a shirt and a track pant of yours if you haven’t realized yet,” I told him as I looked down at what I was wearing.

“Everything of mine is yours,” he said and that made my heart filled with love.

“Are you alright? I mean did I hurt you?”

“No, you didn’t. Stop worrying about me so much,” I laughed and realized we were already on the bridge very near to the house.

“Zac, I need to hang up I am already near...” before I could complete I jerked forward because of the driver who applied a sudden break. My phone slipped out of my hand and as I realized what happened I looked forward to find a car before us stopped in the middle of the road. A lady was driving the car and she looked out apologetically shouting a sorry to the driver.

“What are you doing lady?” the driver yelled at the lady as he began to undo his seat belt.

I shook my head as they started bickering and as I realized my phone fell out of my hand, I moved down to pick my phone up but when I sat back on my seat, rays of light fell on my eyes and I could still hear Zachary’s worried voice calling out for me from the call. Stopping the light hitting my eyes by my hand I looked to my side towards the back of the car to find a truck coming our way in a full speed. Before I could shout or get out of the car, it was too late. The truck hit the taxi from behind with full speed with me in the back seat. Our Taxi turned around with a screeching noise and as if the impact was not enough, our car hit another car which caused the taxi to fly up and then back to the ground. My head hit the roof and the window every second when it tumbled.

Cries and screams left my mouth and the only thing that I registered was being hit by a truck. Still, in the tumbling car, I felt my world rotating as in two to three tumble, I felt as if I was not on the ground anymore. True, to my feel my eyes fell on the road from where our car started to tumble upside down and before anyone or anybody could do anything, our car struck the barrier of the bridge hard and the car dived into the water.

Water filled in my nose as I felt my consciousness fading but before I closed my eyes, my eyes fell on the body of the driver who floated on his seat hitting the car’s windshield.

Second series name is “Irresistible Love”